

$$
2^{t} \cdot 108=300400
$$



## +4,

## 




# A N <br> ACCOUNT <br> OF THE 

## European Settlements

 I N
## A M E R I C A.

 In Six Parts.I. A flort Hiftory of the $\mid$ III. Of the Spanifh Settle-

Difcovery of that Part of the World.
II. The Manners and Cuftoms of the original Inhabitants.
ments.
IV. Of the Portuguefe.
V. Of the French, Dutch, and Danifh.
VI. Of the Englifh.

Each Part contains
An accurate Defcription of the Settlements in it, their Extent, Climate, Productions, Trade, Genius and Difpofition of their Inhabitants: the Interefts of the feveral Powers of Furope with refpect to thofe Settlements; and their Political and Commercial Views with regard to each other.

$$
\begin{gathered}
\text { IN TWO VOLUMES. } \\
\text { VOL. I. }
\end{gathered}
$$

The Fourth Edition, with Improvements.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { Lo O N D O N: } \\
& \text { Printed for J. DodsLey, in Pall-Mall, } \\
& \frac{\text { MDCCLXV. }}{}
\end{aligned}
$$



$$
\operatorname{lomss} 25 \% 1
$$

## 

## P R E F A C E.



THE affairs of America bave lately engaged a great deal of the public attention. Before the prefent war, there were but a very fere who made the biflory of that quarter of the world any part, of their ftudy; though the matter is certainly very curious itfelf, and extremely interefing to us as a trading people.

The biffory of a country which, though vafa in extent, is the property only of four nations; and which, thougb peopled probably for a Series of ages, is only known to the reft of the world.for about two centuries, does not naturally afford matter for many volumes. Yet it is certain, that, to acquire a proper knowledge of the biftory of the events in America, an idea of its prefent fate, and a competent judgment of its trade, a great deal of reading bas been found requifite. And I may add, that

## PREFACE.

the reading on many parts of this fubject is dry and difgufing; that authors bave treated on it, fome without a. रufficient knorvledge of the fubject, and others in fuch a manner as no knowledge of the fibject in the autbor could induce any body to become readers. That fome are loaded with a lumber of matter that can intereft very ferw; and that others obfcure the truth in many particulars, to gratify the low prejudices of parties, and, I may Jay, of nations. Whatever is written by the Englifh Settled in our colonies, is to be read with, great caution; becaufe very ferw of them write without a bias to the intereft of the particular province to which they belong, or perbaps to a particular faction in that province. It is only by comparing the printed accounts with one another, and thoje with the heft private informations, and correcting all by authentic matter of record, that one can difcover the truth; and this batb been a matter of fome difficulty.

With regard to the foreign fettlements, recourfe was bad to the beft printed accounts.

## PREFACE.

of travellers.and others; and, in fome points, to private informauion from intelligent traders. The materials for the foreign Settlements are far from being as perfect, or as much to be depended upon, as we could wifh; it was very feldom that $I$ could venture to tranfcribe any thing directly from them with. out fome addition or fome corrective.

In the biflorical part of this work, I fixed my eye principally on - Jome capital matters, which might the moft fully engage and beft reward the attention of the reader; and in treating of thofe I droelt only upon fuch events as feemed to me to afford fome political infruction, or to open the characters of the principal actors in thofe great fcenes. The affairs which feemed moft worthy of an account of any length, are thofe fplendid and remarkable events of the difcovery of America, and the conqueft of the only treo civilized kingdoms it contained.

In treating of oiber parts, I bave given fo much of the bifory of each country as may ferves

## PREFACE.

ferve to fuew, when and upon what principles it was planted, to enable the reader the better to judge of its prefent condition. Thefe accounts are very flort; and, confidering of what fort of matter fuch biftories are compofed, I believe I 乃ball deferve as much for what I bave omitted, as for what I bave inferted. If $I$ could not write well upon any fubject, I bave endeavoured always to rerite concifely.

My principal view, in treating of the $\int$-veral Settlements, was, to drawe every thing towards their trade, which is the point that concerns us the mof materially; for which reafon, I bave but little confulered their civil, and yet lefs their natural bifory, further than as they tended to throw fome light upon the commerce of thefe countries; except where the matters were very curious, and ferved to diverfify the work.

It is not to be expected that a performance of this kind can be written equally througbout.

## PREFACE.

In fome places, the fubject refufes all ornament; and the matter, dry in itfelf, is by no art to be made othervife: in fome, a contagion communicated from the dulnefs of materials, which yet were neceffary to the work? may probably appear; in many, and perbaps the moft blameable parts, the author alone muft be anfwerable.

Having Jpoken perbaps a little too bardly of my materials, I muft except the affitance I bave had from the judicious collection called Harris's Voyages. T'bere are not many finer pieces than the biftory of Brazil in that collection; the light in which the author fets the events in that bifory is fine and inftructive; an uncommon Spirit prevails througb it ; and bis remarks are every where friking and deep. The little ketch I bave given in the part of Portuguefe America, if it bas any merit, is entirely due to that original. However the accounts given of many things in that part of bis work which relates to the Engli/h and French Settlements may be defective, and fuited

## PREFACE.

Suited rather to the ancient than to the ereSent fate of affairs in that part of the world: bis remarks have rarely this fault; and where I differ from bim in any respect, it is with deference to the judgment of a writer to whom this nation is much obliged, for endeavouring every where with fo much good Sense and iloquence to rouse that fir it of generous enterprize, that can alone make any nation powerfull or glorious.
A. D. 1761.


CO N-

## CO NT E NT S

## Of the First Volume.

## PART.

The difcovery of America, and the reduction of Mexico and Peru.

CHAP. I.

THE Alate of Europe before the discovery of America. The project of Columbus. His application to Several courts. His fuccellfulapplifation to that of Spain. His voyage. The difcovery of the Bahamas, and, Greater Antilles.
page 3
CHAP. II.
The difcovery of the Caribbees. Columbus returns to. Europe: His behaviour at Lifbon. His reception at Barcelona by Ferdinand and Ifabella. Second voyage of Columbus. The condition of the Spaniards in Hispaniola. The city of ISabella built, and a Spanifb colony Settled. A voyage for better difcovering the coast of Cuba.
Vol. I.

## ii CONTENTS.

The difficulties attending the voyage. Famaiaz dijcovered. Columbus returns to Hijpaniola. The Spaniards rebel. A war with the Indians of that country. They are conquered. Their. fobeme for farving the Spaniards. 25

## CH A P. IV.

Complaints againft Columbus. A per for is Sent to enquire into bis conduct. He returns to Spain. He is acquitted. He Jets out on bis third voyage. He discovers the continent of South America. He fails to Hijpaniola. 33

## C HA P. V.

Columbus funds the Spaniards of Hispaniola in rebellion. His measures to fupprefsit. New complaints againft bim in Spain. He is Julperfeded in the government, and Sent to Spain in irons.

## C HAP. VI.

The difcoveries of Americus $V e \int p u t i u s$, and other adventurers. What caused the spirit of difcovers.

CH AP:

## CONTENTS.

## CH A P. VII.

Columbus again acquitted. Undertakes a fourth voyage. Discovers the coaft of Terra Firma and the iftbmus of Darien. Returns to Hifpaniola. His reception there. Purfues bis discoveries to the coast of Terra Firma. He is driven to Jamaica, and Jbipwrecked on that inland. His diftrefles there. The rebellion of bis men, which be fupprefles. He leaves the inland and returns to Spain. His reception there. He dies.

50

## CH A P. VIII.

The character of Columbus. Some reflexions on the conduct of the court of Spain.

## CH A P. IX.

The discoveries and conquests of Balboa. Velafquez fend's Cortes on the Mexican expedition. The fate of the Mexican empire. Cortes makes an alliance with the Tlafcalans.

## CH A P, X,

Cortes builds La Vera Cruz. He marches to Mexico. His reception by Montezuma. Corte imprifons Montezuma. That. prince's Ara-
b 2
taken
tagem to gain bis liberty; the consequence of $i t$.

## C HA P. XI.

The attempts of Montezuma to make the Spaniards leave Mexico. The arrival of Narvaez to take the command from Cortes. Cortes Leaves. Mexico. Defeats and takes. Narvaez prifoner. The Spaniards in Mexico befieged. Cortes rajes the liege. Montezuma is killed.

## CH A P. XII.

Guatimozin chofen emperor by the Mexicans. He befieges the Spaniards in their quarters. Obliges Cortes to retire out of the city. kiftrefles bim in bis retreat. The battle of Otumba. Cortes retreats to Tlafcala.

96

## CH A P. XIII.

Spaniards font against Cortes join bim. He marches again to Mexico. A conSpiracy againft bis life baffled.

## CH AP. XIV:

The Fere of Mexico. Terms of accommodation refused by the Irexicans. IDe Spaniards re$?$ puled

## CONTENTS.

C H A P. XVI,
Terra Firma. Its extent and produce. The cities of Panama, Cartbagena, and Portobello. The galleons. The ille of Cuba. The Havanna. Hijpaniola. Porto Rico. Reflexions on the policy of Spain with regard to the colonies.

218

## $\mathrm{P} \quad \mathrm{A} \quad \mathrm{R} \quad \mathrm{T} \quad \mathrm{IV}$.

The Portuguefe Settlements.
C H A P. I.
An account of the difcovery of Brazil. The metbod of fettling it. Conquered by the Dutch. Reconquered by the Portuguefe.

C H A P. II.
The climate of Brazil. Of the Brazil wood. $3^{60}$

CHAP.

## C. H A P. III.

The trade of Brazil. Its intercourfe woith Afri-- ca. Tbe fettlement of the river Amazons and Rio Faneiro. The gold mines. The

- commonveciltt of the Paulifts. The diamond mines.


## CHAP. IV.

Regulation of the Portuguefe trade. The defcrittion of st. Salvador, tbe capital of Brazil. Tibe fleets for that city. Rio Janeiro and Fernambucca.

## CHAP. V.

The charafter of the American Portuguefe. The fate of the Negroes. Tbe government. 32 I

## CH.A P. VI.

Three forts of people in Nero Spain. Tbe Whites, Indians, and Negroes; tbe cbaracters of thofe. The elergy, tbeir cbaracters. The civilgowernment, its cbarafter. 238

## CHAP. VII.

Nere Nexico. Its difcovery. Climate Pro-
dricts. Tbe Englifb clans to California. 243 CHAP. VIII.

Tbe climate and joil of Peru. Its produce. The mines, the cocaiand berb of Paraguay. 245

## C HAP. IX.

The weines of Peru. The wool. The lamas and vicunnas, 乃eep of Peru. Jfefuits bark. Guizea pepper. The dung of Iquiqua. 2uickfilver mines.

> CHAP. X.

The character of the Peruvians. Their divifions. The Indian fefival. Honours paid to a defcendant of the ynca.

CHAP.

The cities of Peru, Lima, Cufco, and 2uito; a defcription of them. Callao, its trade and deftruction. The viceroy of Peru. His jurifdiction, and revenues. 260

## C H A P. XII.

The temperature of the air in Cbili. The foil. Its fertility. A defcription of the principal towns. Tbe trade of Cbili. 268

## C H A P. XIII.

Tbe Spaniards in this province but few. The Americans, their character. Some free. 271

## C H A P. XIV.

The climate of Paraguay. Its rivers. The province of La Plata. Tbe town of Buenos-Ayres. Its trade.

274
C H A P. XV.
The territory of the jefuits in Paraguay. Their manner of Settling and governing it. The obedience of the people. Some reflexions on the late tranfactions there. .

C A A ${ }^{278}$

## CONTENTS.

pulfed by a fratagem of Guatimozin. A nerw Aratagem of: Guatimozin. He is taken. The city furrenders. Guatimozin tortured. Cortes fuperfeded in bis government. Reflexions on the Spanifb cruelties.

114

## C H A P. XV.

Ibe fcheme of Pizarro and Almagro for the conqueß of Peru. Their characters. The ftate of the empire of Peru at that time. The taking of the ynca Atabalipa.

## C H A P. XVI.

The murder of the ynca. A difpute between Pizarro and Almagra. They are reconciled. Almagro's expedition to Cbili. The Peruvians renew the war, and befiege Cufco. Almagro returns and defeats them. Almagro renews the quarrel with Pizarro, but is defeated and put to death.

142

## C H A P. XVII.

The final difperfion of the Peruvian army. The confpiracy agait Pizarro. He is murdered.

154

## C H.A P. XVIII.

Foung Alnagro made governor. The new viceroy Vaca di Caftro arrives. Puts to death young Almagro. Puts an end to the factions, and jettles the pronince. He is recalied. Gonzalo Pizurro raijes a rebellion, and ufurps the government. Peter de la Gafca made viceroy. Defeats the troops of Pizarro, and puts bim to death.


CONTENTS.

## PART. II.

## The Manners of the Americans.

## CH AP. I.

The persons of the Americans. Their dress and rear of living. Their manner of converging. Their hospitality. Their temper. Their religion and fuperfitions. Their medicine. 167

## C HA P. II.

The government of the Americans. Their countcils. Their orators. Their feafts. Their mannev of adminiftering justice.

## CH A P. III.

Their mourning for their dead. The feat of Souls, The American women, their occupations: Their marriages and divorces. $18 \mathbf{2}$

## CH A P. IV.

The Indian manner of preparing for war. The Songs and dances. Their taking the field. Their method of difcovering and attacking the enemy. Their cruel treatment of their prisoners of war.

CONTENTS.

## PAR TA.

## SPANISH AMERICA.

CHAP. C .
A general defeription of America.
203

## С HA P. II,

The climate and foil of Next a Spain. Animals. Its vegetable produce.

## CHAP. IT.

The gold and fiver mines. The manner of puriflying thole metals. Some thoughts on the generation of metals. Of the quantity of those zagtals produced ins the Spanifo Weft-Indies.

> CHAP. IV.

Of cochineal and cacao.

## CH AP. V,

The trade of Mexico. Some account of that city. The fairs of Acapulca and La Vera Cruz. The lota and regifer Ships. 228 CHAP 。

## A N

## ACCOUNT

> OFTHE

EUROPEAN SETTLEMENTS

$$
\mathrm{I} \mathrm{~N}
$$

A M E R I C A.
V O L. I.

Tス


：


## [3]



## PARTI.

The difcrvery of America, and the reduction of Mexico and Peru.


## C H A P. I.

The fate of Europe before the difcovery of America. The projeet of Columbus. His application to feveral courts. His fuccefffulapplication to that of Spain. His voyage. The difcovery of the Babamas, and Greater Antilles.


HERE was an extraordinary coincidence of events at the time that the difcovery of America made one of the principal; the invention of printing, the making of gunpowder, the improvement of navigation, the revival of ancient learning, and the reformation; all of thefe confpired to change the face of Europe entirely. At this time the principal monarchies began to knit, and to acquire the ftrength, and take the form, they have

4 An Account of the European at this day. Before this period, the manners of Europe were wholly barbarous; even in Italy, where the natural mildnefs of the climate and the dawning of literature had a little foftened the minds of the people, and introduced fomething approaching towards politeners, the hiftory preceding this æra, and indeed for fome time after it, is nothing but one feries of treafons, ufurpations, murders, and maflacres: nothing of a manly courage, nothing of a folid and rational policy. Scarce any ftate had then very extenfive views, or looked much further than to the prefent advantage. They did not well comprehend the complicated fyitem of interefts that Europe formed even long before this. Lewis the eleventh, who was looked upon as one of the wifet princes in his time, and one who facrificed every thing to his ambition, facrificed one of the fairef objects of that ambition to a pique, which fince his time could have little influence on the counfels of any prince. His fon, Charles the eighth, as he von Italy without either courage or conduct, fo he loft it by a chain of falfe meafures, fuch as we may venture to fay has no parallel in later times. A wild romantic courage in the Northern and Wettern parts of Europe, and a wicked policy in the Italian ftates, was the character of that age. If we look into the manners of the courts, there there appear but very faint marks of cultivation and politenefs. The interview between our Edward the fourth and his brother of France, wherein they were both caged up like wild beafts, fhews difpofitions very remote from a true fenfe of honour, from the dignity of their ftations, or any juft ideas of politenefs and humanity. All the anecdotes which remain of thefe and other courts, are in the fame fpirit.

If the courts had made fuch poor advances in policy and politenefs, which might feem the natural growth of courts at any time, both the courts and the people were yet lefs advanced in ufeful knowledge. The little learning which then fubfifted, was only the dotage of the fcholattic philofophy of words; together with the infancy of politer learning, which only concerned words too, though in another way. The elegance and purity of the Latin tongue was then the higheft, and almoft the only point of a fcholar's ambition. Mathematical learning was little valued or cultivated. The true fyftem of the heavens was not dreamed of. There was no knowledge at all of the real form of the earth; and in general the ideas of mankind were not extended beyond their fenfible horizon.

In this fate of affairs Chriftopher Columbus, a native of Genoa, undertook to extend the boundaries which ignorance had given to the world. This man's defign arofe from the jurt idea he had formed of the figure of the earth; tho' the maps, more erroneous than his conjectures, made him miffake the object. His defign was to find a paffage to China and India by the Weftern ocean. It is not improbable, that befides the glory attending fuch a difcovery, and the private advantages of fortune he might propofe to derive from it, Columbus had a furcher incentive from national jealoufy and refentment. Venice and Genoa were then almoft the only trading powers in Europe; and they had no other fupport of their power but their commerce. This bred a rivalhip, a jealoufy, and frequent wars between them; but in traffick Venice was much fuperior; the had drawn to herfelf almoft the whole commerce of India, al ways one of the moft valuable in the world, and then carried on only by the way of Egypt and the Red Sea. An emulation of this kind might probably have put Columbus on finding another and more direct paffage to the EaftIndies, and by that means transfering this profitable trade to his own country. But neither that which he fought, nor that which he found, was deftined for his country. However, he performed the duty of a good citizen, and made his firft propofal at home ; at home it was rejected. Difcharged of this obligation,
he applied to the court of France, and meeting no better fuccefs there, he offered next his fervices to our Henry the feventh. This prince was rather a prudent fteward and manager of a kingdom than a great king, and one of thofe defenfive geniufes who are the laft in the world to reliih a great but problematical defign. It is therefore no wonder that his brother, whom Columbus had employed to follicit in England, after feveral years fpent here, had little fuccefs in his negotiation. But in Portugal, where he applied himfelf after his failure here, his offers were not only rejected but he was infulted and ridiculed; he found, however, in thefe infults, and this ridicule, a new incitement to purfue his fcheme, urged forward by the ftings of anger and refentment.

Laft of all he exercifed his intereft and his patience for eight years together at the court of Ferdinand and Ifabella. There is a fort of enthufiafm in all projectors, abfolutely neceffary for their affairs, which makes them proof againft the moft fatiguing delays, the moft mortifying difappointments, the moft hocking infults; and, what is feverer than all, the prefumptuous judgments of the ignorantupon their defigns. Columbus had a fufficient thare of this quality. He had every day, during this long face, to combat with every objection that want of knowledge, or that a falfe knowledge, could propofe. Some held was all that could be known, floated like a vaft fcum upon the ocean; that the ocean itfelf was infinite. Others, who entertained more juft notions, and believed that the whole of the earth and waters compofed one vaft globe, drew a confequence from it as abfurd as the former opinion. For they argued, that if Columbüs fhould fail beyond a certain point, the convexity of this globe would prevent his return. As is ufual in fuch cafes, every one abounded with objections. His whole time was fpent in fruitlefs endeavours to enlighten ignorance, to remove prejudice, and to vanquifh that obftinate incredulity, which is of all others the greateft enemy to improvement, rejecting every thing as falfe and abfurd, which isever folittle out of the track of common experience; and it is of the moredangerous confequence, as it carries a delufive air of coolnefs, of temper and wifdom. With all this, he had yet greater difficulties from the interefts of mankind, than from their malignity and ignorance. The expence of the undertaking, inconfiderable as this expence was, was at the bottom the chief fupport of the other objections, and had more weight than all the reft together. However, with an affiduity and firmnefs of mind, neverenough to be admired and applauded, he at length overcame all difficulties; and, to his inexpreffible joy, with a
fleet of three fhips, and the title and command of an admiral, fet fail on the third of Auguft, 1492, on a voyage the moft daring and grand in the defign, and in the event of which the world was the moft concerned, of any that ever yet was undertaken.

It muft not be omitted here, in honour to the fex, and in juftice to Ifabella, that this fcheme was firft countenanced, and the equipment made by the queen only; the king had no fhare in it; fle even raifed the money neceffary for the defign upon her own jewels.

I do not propofe to relate all the particulars of Columbus's voyage in a track now fo well known, and fo much frequented; but then there was no chart to direct him, no lights from former navigators, no experience of the winds and currents particular to thofe feas. He had no guide but hisown genius, nor any thing to comfort and appeafe his companions, difcouraged and mutinous with the length and hopelefsnefs of the voyage, but fome indications which he drew from the cafual appearances of land birds and floating fea-weeds, moft of them little to be depended upon, but which this wife commander, well acquainted with the human heart, always knew how to turn to the beft advantage. It was in this expedition that the variation of the compafs was firt obferved; an appearance which has ever fince puzzled all philofophers, and which at this
io An Account of the European
this time made a great impreffion upon Columbus's pilots; when in an unknown and boundlefs ocean, far from the road of former navigation, nature itfelf feemed altered, and the only guide they had left, appeared to be upon the point of forfaking them. But Columbus, with a wounderful quicknefs and fagacity, pretended to difcover a phyfical caufe for this appearance, which, tho' it did not fatisfy himfelf, was plaufible enough to remove fomething of the terrors of his mariners. Expedients of this kind were daily wanting, and the fertile genius of this difcoverer invented them daily. However, by frequent ufe, they began to lofe their effect; the crew infifted on his returning, and grew loud and infolent in their demand. Some even talked of throwing the admiral overboard. His invention, and almoft his hopes were near exhaufted, when the only thing which could appeafe them happened; the clear difcovery of land, after a voyage of thirty-three days, the longeft ever any man was known to be from fight of fhore before that time.

They landed on one of the iflands now called Lucayos, or Bahamas, which is remarkable for nothing but this event; and here it was, that the two worlds, if I may ufe the expreffion, were firft introduced to one another; a meeting of an extrordinary nature, and which produced great changes in both. The firft
firt thing Columbus did, after thanking God for the fuccefs of his important voyage, was to take poffeffion of the illand in the name of their Catholic majefties, by fetting up a crofs upon the fhore; great multitudes of the inhabitants lookingon, ignorantand unconcerned at a ceremony which was to deprive them of their natural liberty. The flay of the Spaniards in this ifland was but fhort; they found, from the extremepoverty of the people, that thefewere by no means the Indies, which they fought for.

Columbus at his departure very prudently took with him fome of the natives, that they might learn the Spanifh tongue, and be his guides and interpreters in this new fcene of affairs; nor were they unwilling to accompany him. He touched on feveral of the iflands in the fame clufter, enquiring every where for gold, which was the only object of commercehe thought worth his care, becaufe the only thing that could give the court of Spain an high opinion of his difcoveries. All directed him to a great ifland called Bohio, of which they fpoke extraordinary things, and principally that it abounded in gold. They told him it lay to the Southward. To the Southward he fteered his courle, and found the ifland, which he called Hifpaniola, no waysinferior to the reports; commodiousharbours, an agreeable climate, a good foil, and, what was of moff confequence, a country that dance of gold; inhabited by an humane and hofpitable people, in a fate of fimplicity fit to be worked upon. Thefe circumftances determined Columbus to make this inland the center of his defigns, to plant a colony there, and to eftablifh things in fome permanentorder before he proceeded to further difcoveries. But to carry his defigns of a fettlement here, and his fchemes of future difcoveries into execution, it was neceffary that he fhould return to Spain and equip himfelf with a proper force. He had now collected a fufficient quantity of gold to give credit to his voyage at court, and fuch a number of curiofities of all kinds as might ftrike the imaginations, and engage the attention of the people. Before he parted, he took care to fecure the friendfhip of the principal king of the ifland by careffes and prefents, and under pretence of leaving him a force fufficient to aflift him againft his enemies; he laid the ground-work of a colony. He built a fort, and put a fmall garrifon of Spaniards into it, with fuch directions for their conduct as might have enfured their fafety and the good offices of the inhabitants, if the men had not been of that kind, who are incapable of acting prudently either from their own or other people's widdom. He did every thing to gain the efieem of the natives, by the juftice, and even generofity of his deal-
ings, and the politenefs and humanity with which he behaved upon every occafion. He Thewed them too, that tho' it was not in his will, it was not the lefs in his power to do them mifchief, if they acted foas to force him upon harfher meafures. Thefurprizing effects of his cannon, and the fharpnefs of the Spanifh fwords, of which he made an innocentoftentation, convinced them of this.

When the Spaniards firt arrived in that country, they were taken for men come from heaven; and it was no wonder, confidering the extreme novelty of their appearance, and the prodigious fuperiority they had in every refpect over a people in all the nakednefs or uncultivated nature. Whatever therefore the Indians got from them, they valued in an high degree, not only as curious and ufeful, but even as things facred. The perfons of the Spaniards were refpected in the fame light. Columbus, who knew the value of opinion, did all he could to keep them in their error; and indeed no action of his, either of weaknefs or cruelty, could furnifh matter to undeceive them. For which reafon, on his departure, he left the people with the beft inclinations imaginable to nurfe his infant colony. And when he defired fome of the inhabitants to carry into Spain, he was more at a lofs whom he hould accept, than how he thould prevail upon them to go.

C H A P.

14 An Account of the European

## C H A P. II.

The dijcovery of the Caribbees. Columburs returns to Europe. His behaviour at Libon. His reception at Barcelona by Ferdinand and Ifabella. Second voyage of Columbus. The condition of the Spaniards in Hippaniola. The city of IJabella built, and a Spanifb colony Settled. A voyage for better dijcovering the coaft of Cuba.

0N his return homewards, fill attentive to hisdefign, he aimed at fuch difcoveries as could beprofecuted without deviating confiderably from his courfe. He touched upon feveral iflands to the Southward, and difcovered the Caribbees, of the barbarity of whofe inhabitants he had heard terrible accounts in Hifpaniola. Hehad before landed upon Cuba in his paffage from the Bahamas. So that in this his frft voyage, he gained a general knowledge of all the iflands, which lie in fuch an aftoniming number in that great fea which divides North and South America. But hitherto he neither knew nor fufpected any continent between him and China.

He returned to Europe after an abfence of above fix months, and was driven by a great ftorm into the harbour of Lifbon. This he did not look upon as a misfortune; fince here, he had the fatisfaction of convincing the Portuguefedemonftratively of what an error they were guilty in rejecting his propofals. It was now his turn to triumph. Thofe who want fagacity to difcern the advantages of an offer, when it is made to themfelves, and treat it with the greateft fcorn, are always moft ftung with envy when they actually fee thefe advantages in the hands of another. The Portuguefe had fome time before this begun to make a figure : their hips had coafted Africa for a greater length than any had done before them, which opened to them a profitable trade to Guinea. This gave them a reputation. They confidered difcovery as their proper province; and they were enraged to fee that the Caftilians were now let into the fame path, in confequence of an offer which they had rejected. Some propofed to murder the admiral; but all were agreed to treat him in the moft unworthy manner. However, their defign of infultinghimgave Columbusan opportunity at once of gratifying his refentment, maintaininghis own dignity, and afferting the honour of the flag of Caftile. He fent to the king at his firft entering the harbour, to defire a liberty to come up to Lifbon and refrefh, as he had his mafter's orders not to avoid his ports; adding, that he was not from Guinea, but the Indies. An officer of the king of Portugal came aboard him with an armed force,

16 An Account of the European and ordered him to come afhore, and give an account of himfelf to the king's officers. Columbus told him he had the honour of ferving the king of Caftile, and would own himfelf accountable to noother. ThePortugefe then defired him to fend the mafter of his fhip; this helikewife refufed, faying, that the admirals of Caftile always chofe rather to die than deliver up themfelves, or even the meaneft of their. men; and if violence was intended, he was prepared to meet force with force. A fpirited behaviour, in almoft any circumftance of ftrength, is the moft politic as well as the moft honourable courfe; we preferve a refpect at leaft by it, and with that we generally preferve every thing; but when we lofe refpect, every thing is loft. We invite rather than fuffer infults, and the firft is the only one we can refift with prudence. Columbus found this; the officer did not purfue his demand; the admiral had all the refrefhments he wanted; and was even received at court with particular marks of diftinction.

From Lifbon he proceeded to Seville; the court was then at Barcelona. But before he went to give an account of his voyage, he took all the care he could to provide for another. He wrote an abftract of his proceedings, and fent with it a memorial of all fuch things as were neceffary for the eftablifhment of a colony, and for further difcoveries. Soon afterhe

Settiements in America.
began his journey to Barcelona, every where followed by the admiration and applaufes of the people, who crouded to fee him from all parts. He entered the city in a fort of triumph. And certainly there never was a more innocent triumph, nor one that formed a more new and pleafing fpectacle. He had not deftroyed, but difcovered nations. The Americans he brought with him appeared in all the uncouth finery of their own country, wondered at by every body, and themfelves admiring every thing they faw. The fereral animals, many highly beautiful, and all ftrangers to this part of the world, were fo difpofed as to be feen without difficulty; the other curiofities of the new world were difplayed in the moft advantageous manner; the utenfils, the arms, and the ornaments of a people fo remote from us in fituation and manners; fome valuable for the materials; even the rudenefs of the workmanthip in many made them but the more curious, when it was confidered by whom, and with what inftruments they were wrought. The gold was not forgot. The admiral himfelf clofed the proceffion. He was received by the king and queen with all imaginable marks of efteem and regard; and they ordered a magnificent throne to be erected in publick to do him the greater honour. A chair was prepared for him; in which he fat, and gave, in prefence of the whole court, a full and circumftantial acVol.I.

C
count

I8 An Account of the European
countof allhis difcoveries, with that compofednefs and gravity, which is fo extremely agreeable to the Spanifh humour, and with the modefty of a man who knows he has done things which do not need to be proclaimed by himfelf. The fuccefsful merit of Columbus was underfood by every body; and when the king and queen led the way, all the grandees and nobility of the court vied with each other in their civilities and careffes.

Thefe honours did not fatisfy Columbus. He prepared with all expedition for a fecond voyage. The difficulties attending the firft were all vanifhed. The importance of the object appeared every day more clearly, and the court was willing to fecond the vivacity of his defires to the full. But before his departure there was one thing which they judged wanting to give them a clear and unquertionable right to the countries, which fhould be difcovered. This was a grant of them from the pope. The Portuguefe fome time before had a grantof fuch lands as they fhould difcover within certain latitudes; and this grant made a fimilar one to the Spaniards appear the more neceffary. The pope accordingly gave a very ample bull in their favour, very liberally conceding countries, of which he was fo far from having any poffeffion, that he had no knowledge of them. The limits of this grant was a line drawn from pole to pole, an hundred leagues
leagues to the Weftward of the Azores. On the other fide no bounds at all were fet. This was afterwards a fubject of much controverfy between the crowns of Spain and Portugal, the latter having got a grant of all that fhould be difcovered to the Eaft, as the former had of all to the Weftward; thofe who drew the bulls not having known enough of the figure of the earth to fee, that thefe grants muft neceffarily clafh; and the powers which defired them, were perhaps not forry to find their pretenfions fuch as they might extend or contract at pleafure.

Whatever the validity of this ample grant might be, Columbus was made governor with the higheft authority over all that it contained. But he had fomewhat with him more material for his poffeffion than any charters. This was a fleet of feventeen fail of fhips, with all manner of neceffaries for fettlement or conqueft, and fifteen hundred men on hoard, fome of them of the bert families in Spain. With this fleet he fet fail on his fecond voyage the 25 th of September, 1493. He gave each of the captains inftructions for their courfe fealed, with orders not to open them, unlefs in diftrefs, and feparated from the fleet, that he might create fuch an abfolute dependence of all upon himfelf, as hould preferve an uniformity in their defigns. On the fecond of November they made land, which is the illand now called

$$
\mathrm{C}_{2} \text { Dominica, }
$$

Dominica. But his defign was firft to fettle his colony before he attempted any new difcovery, therefore he made no ftay here, nor at feveral other illands at which he touched before he could make Hifpaniola.

On his arrival he found the fort he had built utterly demolifhed, and all his men killed. The Spaniards had firft fallen out amongft themfelves, upon the ufual fubjects of ftrife, women and gold; and afterwards preferving as little harmony with the natives, and obferving no decency in their behaviour, or juftice in their dealings, they quickly loft their efteem, and were every man murdered, after having been difperfed into different parts of the ifland. The prince, whom they were left to defend, was himfelf wounded in their defence, and bore this mark of his affection and good faith, when Columbus returned to the ifland. The admiral very wifely forbore to make any nice enquiry into the affair, or to commence hoftilities in revenge for the lofs of his foldiers: but he took the moft effectual meafures to prevent fuch an evil for the future; he chofe a more commodious ftation for his colony, on the North-eaft part of the ifland, which had a good port, great conveniency of water, and a good foil, and lay near that where he was informed the richeft mines of the country were found : in gratitude to his royal patronefs, he called it Ifabella. He engaged
in the fettlement with great warmth, and never allowed himfelf a moment's repofe from fuperintending the fortifications, the private houfes, and the works of agriculture; in all which the fatigue was infinite; for he had not only the natural difficulties attending all fuch undertakings, but he had the infuperable lazinefs of the Spaniards to contend with. So that, fpent with the fatigues of folong a voyage, and the greater fatigues he had endured fince he came on fhore, he fell into a dangerous illnefs. Of this accident feveral of his men took the advantage to begin a rebellion, to undo all he had done, and to throw every thing into the moft terrible confufion. Thefe people, on their leaving Spain, had fancied to themfelves that gold was to be found every where in this country, and that there required nothing further to make ample eftates, than to be tranfported into it; but, finding their miftake, and that, inftead of receiving thefe golden fhowers without any pains, they fared ill, laboured hard, and that their profpects of a fortune, if any at all, were remote and uncertain, their difcontent became general; and the mutinous difpofition increafed fo faft, and was carried to fuch extremities, that if the admiral had not recovered at a very critical time, and on his recovery had not acted in the moft refolute and effectual manner, all his hopes of a fettlement in Hifpaniola had been
at an end. He was fatisfied with imprifoning fome of the chiefs. This was neither a time nor a placefor very extenfive orrigorous juftice. He quelled this fedition, but he faw at the fame time that his work was not yet done; he faw another danger, againft which he was to provide with equal diligence. He had good reafons to apprehend, that the Americans were not well affected to their new guefts, and might probably meditate to cut them off, whilft they faw them divided amongft themfelves. To prevent this, as well as to banifh idlenefs from amongt his men, and to revive military difcipline, he marched into the heart of the country, through the moft frequented parts of it, in order of battle, colours flying, and trumpets founding, with the flower of his troops, to the mountains of Cibao; where lay the richeft mines then difcovered in the ifland. Here he built a fort to fecure this advantageous poft, and overawe the country; and then he returned in the fame pomp and order, to the inexpreffible terror of the inhabitants, who had now no profpect of withfanding a force, which to them feemed more than human.

In this expedition Columbus made great oftentation of his cavalry. This was the firft time the Indians of America had ever feen horfes. Their dread of thefe animals and their riders were extreme; they thought both formed but one animal, and the impetuofity of their charge appeared irrefiftible to thefe naked and ill-armed people. Wherever they appeared, thofe Indians, who intended any hoftility, immediately fled; nor did they think the intervention of the deepeft and moft rapid rivers any fecurity; they believed that the horfes could fly, and that nothing was impoffible to creatures fo extrordinary. But Columbus did not rely upon thofe prejudices, though he made all imaginable ufe of them; knowing that thofe things which appear moft terrible at firft, become every day lefs affecting by ufe, and that they even grow contemptible, when their real power is once well known. For which reafon, he neglected none of his former methods of cultivating the affections of the natives; he fill fhewed them all manner of refpect, and when he had taken two perfons of their nation, who had committed fome acts of hoftility, and was at the point of putting them to death, he pardoned and fet them free at the interceffion of a prince of the country, with whom he was in alliance. On the other hand, he faw how neceffary it was to preferve a frict difcipline amongft the Spaniards, to keep them from that idlenefs to which they had fuch a propenfity, and which naturally retarded the growth of the colony, at the fame time that it nourifhed difcontent and fedition. He employed them in cutting roads through the country, a work which the natives never at-
tempted

## 24 An Account of the European

 tempted themfelves, nor now endeavoured to oppofe, though it be one of the beft inftruments of enflaving any barbarous people. This wife governor obferved befides, that the Spaniards conformed with great difficulty to the Indian manner of living, to which, however, they were neceffitated, but from which, for want of ufe, they fuffered great hardfhips: To remedy this evil, he daily fent out fmall parties upon expeditions into the country; from which he derived two material advantages. Firf, he enured, by degrees, all his people to the manner of living in the country ; and fecondly, he taught them to know it perfectly; left a war fhonild find them unprovided in the only point in which the Indians were their fuperiors, and a point which in a woody and mountainous country is certainly of the greateft importance. All this he did without any material hazard to the fum of his affairs. At home, he endeavoured to withdraw the Spaniards from their romantic hopes of miraculous treafures, and to fix them to a rational and induftrious courfe of life. He reprefented to them, that there was no real wealth but what arofe from labour; and that a garden, a corn ground, and a mill, were riches more to their prefent purpofe, than all the gold they were in expectation of meeting in the Indies. In Mort, he laboured for the eftablifament of this colony with as much affiduity, as though hisviews had extended no further; at the fame time that he meditated the greateft difcoveries, and confidered thofe things which had aftonifhed the world, only as the earneft of his future performances.

I have before mentioned his having put in at Cuba. The country, from fome fpecimens, feemed a rich difcovery; but whether it was an ifland, or a part of fome great continent, he was altogether uncertain. Now that he had got his colony to take firm root in the Indies, he prepared with all expedition to afcertain this point, and to purh his difcoveries to the utmoft, in which he had fucceeded hitherto fo happily.

## C H A P. III.

The difficulties attending the voyage. Famaica difcovered." Columbus returns to HiJpaniola. The Spaniards rebel. A war with the Indians of that country. They are conquered. Tbeir fcheme for ftarving the Spaniards.

THIS voyage was more remarkable for the hardfhips which the admiral and his men fuffered; than for any confiderable difcoveries it produced. As he endeavoured to coaft along the Southern fhore of Cuba, he was entangled in alabyrinth of an innumerablemulti-

26 An Account of the European
tude of inlands, amongft which he reckoned 160 in one day. They were moft of them pleafant and well inhabited, affording our navigator an agreeable meditation on this fertility of nature, where the world looked for nothing but a barren ocean. Thefe iflands, Columbus, who had a grateful mind, in which the memory of his benefactrefs was always uppermoft, called Jardin de la Reyna, or the queen's garden, in honour of queen Ifabella. But their number and fertility made little amends for the obftruction they gave Columbus in the courfe of his navigation. The coaft abfolutely unknown, among fo many rocks, fands, and fhelves, the fudden and violent ftorms, the tornadoes, and the terrible thunder and lightning fo conftant between the tropics, obliged him to keep a continual watch, and held his mind upon a conftant ftretch; the voyage was extended to an unprofitable length by thefe difficulties; and being driven out to fea, the worft difafter of all befel them. Their provifions fell fhort. In this extremity they were obliged to come to a very narrow and bad allowance, in the diftribution of which the admiral fared nothing better than the reft. In this unremitted fatigue of body and of mind, in famine and in danger, his ufual firmnefs began nearly to forfake him; but it could go no further than to oblige him to remark in his journal, that no intereft of his own fhould
ever oblige him to engage again in fuch an enterprife. They were at laft relieved by the appearance of Jamaica, where they were hofpitably received, and fupplied with Caffava bread and water. From thence they proceeded, mortified and difappointed, to Hifpaniola, not being able to come to any certainty concerning Cuba, other than that they underftood from fome of the inhabitants that it was an ifland. This difappointment, and the infinite fatigue and difficulty of the voyage, threw Columbus into a lethargy, which was near being fatal to him, and of which he was fcarcely recovered when they arrived at the harbour of Ifabella.

Here they found all things in confufion, and the colony in the utmoft danger of being a fecond time utterly deftroyed; as if its profperity or deftruction depended upon the prefence or abfence of Columbus. For no fooner was he failed, than the Spaniards, who were very difficultly retained in their duty by all his fteadinefs and wifdom, broke through all regulations, laughed at government and difcipline, and fpread themfelves over the ifland, committing a thoufand diforders, and Jiving at free quarter upon the inhabitants, whofe hatred to them was worked up to fuch a point, that they wanted only the word from their princes to fall on and maffacre the whole colony ; a thing by no means impracticable, in its prefent diforder.
diforder. Four of the principal fovereigns of the illand took advantage of this difpofition, and united to drive out thofe imperious intruders. None adhered to them but one called Gunacagarry, the fame prince whom Columbus from the firft had taken fo much pains to oblige. In his dominions fome of the Spaniards found protection. The other princes had already commenced hoftilities, and one of them killed fixteen of the Spaniards, who were taking no uniform meafures to oppofe them; neither in their prefent anarchy could it be well expected.

In this condition was the ifland on the arrival of Columbus, whofe firft bufinefs was to collect the fcattered fragments of the colony, and to form them into a body. This he was the better able to accomplifh, becaufe the prefent danger added a weight to his authority; but it was neceffary that he fhould lofe no time. He was refolved to act with what force he had, rather than wait until the union of the iflanders might be better cemented againft him, and they might find fome leffer matters in their favour to raife their courage, and abate their terror of the Spanifh arms. He therefore firft marched againft the king, who had killed the fixteen Spaniards; as it was an enterprife coloured with an appearance of juftice, and becaufe that prince happened to be the worft prepared to receive him. He was eafily fubdued, and fe-
veral of his fubjects fent prifoners into Spain, The fecond whom Columbus defigned to attack being better prepared againft force, he was refolved to circumvent him by fraud, and got him into his power by a ftratagem, which did no honour to his fincerity, and rather fhewed great weaknefs in this unfortunate barbarian, than any extraordinary contrivance in thofe who deceived him.

The other princes were not terrified at thefe examples. Their hatred to the Spaniards increafed; and perceiving that all depended upon a fudden and vigorous exertion of theirftrength, they brought an immenfe army, it is faid of one hundred thoufand men, into the field, which was arrayed in the largeft plain in that country. Columbus, though he had but a finall force, did not fcruple to go out to meet them. His army confifted but of two hundred foot, twenty horfe, and twenty wolf dogs. The latter part of this army has a ludicrous appearance; but it was a very ferious matter amongt a people no better provided with arms offenfive or defenfive than the Indians. Neither was it rafh in Columbus to venture an engagement againft forces fo vaftly fuperior in numbers; for when fuch numbers are no better fkilled or armed than thefe were, their multitude is in fact no juft caufe of dread but to themfelves. The event was anfwerable; the victory was decifive for the Spaniards, in which

## $3^{\circ}$ An Account of the European

 which their horfes and dogs had a confiderable fhare ; the lofs on the fide of the Indians was very great. From that day forward they defpaired, and relinquifhed all thoughts of diflodging the Spaniards by force. Columbus had but little difficulty in reducing the whole ifland, which now became a province of Spain, had a tribute impofed, and forts built in feveral parts to enforce the levying of it, and to take away from this unhappy people all profpect of liberty.In this affecting fituation they often afked the Spaniards, when they intended to return to their own country. Small as the number of thefe ftrangers was, the inhabitants were extremely burthened to fubfift them. One Spaniard confumed more than ten Indians; a circumfance which hews how little this people hadadvanced in the artof cultivating the earth, or how lazy they were in doing it, fince their indigence reduced them to fuch an extreme frugality, that they found the Spaniards, who are fome of the moft abftemious people upon earth, exceffively voracious in the comparifon. Their experience of this, joined to their defpair, put the Indians upon a project of ftarving out their invaders. In purfuance of this fcheme, they entirely abandoned the little agriculture which they practifed, and unanimoully retired into the moft barren and impracticable parts of the ifland. This ill-ad-

## Settlements in America.

vifed ftratagem compleated their ruin. A number of people crouded into the worft parts of the country, fubfifting only upon its fpontaneous productions, were foon reduced to the moft terrible famine. Its fure attendant epidemical ficknefs purfued at its heels; and this miferable people, half famifhed and leffened a third of their numbers, were obliged to relinquifh their fcheme, to come down into the open country, and to fubmit once more to bread and fetters.

This conqueft, and the fubfequent ones made by the feveral European nations, with as little colour of right as confcioufnefs of doing any thing wrong, gives one juft reafon to reflect on the notions entertained by mankind in all times concerning the right of dominion. At this period, few doubted of the power of the pope to convey a full right to any country he was pleafed to chalk out; amongft the faithful, becaufe they were fubject to the church; and amongft infidels, becaufe it was meritorious to make them fubject to it. This notion began to lofe ground at the reformation, but another arofe of as bad a tendency; the idea of the dominion of grace, which prevailed with feveral, and the effects of which we have felt amongft ourfelves. . The Mahometan great merit is to fpread the empire and the faith; and none amongtt them doubt the legality of fubduing any nation for thefe good purpofes. The An Account of the European
Greeks held, that the barbarians were naturally defigned to be their llaves, and this was fo general a notion, that Ariftotle himfelf, with all his penetration, gave into it very ferioufly. In truth, it has its principle in human nature, for the generality of mankind very readily flide from what they conceive a fitnefs for government, to a right of governing; and they do not fo readily agree, that thofe who are fuperior in endowments fhould only be equal in condition. Thefe things partly palliate the guilt and horror of a conqueft, undertaken with fo little colour, over a people whofe chief offence was their credulity, and their confidence in men who did not deferve it. But the circumftances of Columbus, the meafures he was obliged to preferve with his court, and his humane and gentle treatment of this people, by which he mitigated the rigor of this conquert, take off much of the blame from him, as the neceffity of taking up arms at all never arofe from his conduct, or from his orders. On the contrary; his whole behaviour both to the Spaniards and Indians, the care he took to eftablifh the one without injury to the other, and the conftant bent of his policy to work every thing by gentle methods, may well be an example to all perfons in the fame fituation:

Since I have digreffed fo far, it will be the more excufable to mention a circumftance recorded in the hiftory of this fettlement. Ame-
rica
rica was then, at leaft thefe parts of it were, without almof any of thofe animals by which we profit fo greatly. It had neither horfes, nor oxen, nor theep, nor fwine. Columbus brought eight fows into America, and a fmall number of horned cattle. This was the ftock which fupplied, about two hundred years ago, a country now the moft abounding in thefe animals of any patt of the known world; in which too it has been a bufinets, for this century pant, to hunt oxen merely for their hides. An example which fhews how fmall a number might originally have ferved to produce all the animals upon earth, who commonly procreate very faft to a certain point, and when they arrive at it, feem much at a fand.

## C H A P. IV.

Complaints againft Columbus. A perfon is fent to enquire into bis conduct. He returns to Spain. He is acquitted. He fets out on bis third voyage. He difcovers the continent of Soutb America. He fails to Hippaniola.

wHILST Columbus was reducing this wealthy illand to the obedience of the crown of Caftile, and laying the foundations of the Spanifh grandeur in America, his enemies were endeavouring with pains as indefatigable to ruin him in Spain. Some of the perfons Vol. I. D prin-

34 An Account of the European principally concerned in the late diforders, fled to Spain before his return; and there, to juftify their own conduct, and gratify their malice, they accufed him of neglecting the colony, and of having deceived their majefties and the adventurers with falle hopes of gold, from a country which produced very little either of that metal or any thing elfe that was valuable. Thefe complaints were not without effect; and an officer, fitter by his character for a fpy and informer than a redreffer of grievances, was fent to infpect into his conduct; in which manner of proceeding there was certainly a policy as erroneous, as it was unjuft and ingrateful. At that diftance from the fountain of authority, with an enemy at the door, and a mutinous houfhold, a commander ought aiways to be trufted or removed. This man behaved in a brutifh and infolent manner, like all fuch perfons, who, unconfcious of any merit of their own, are puffed up with any little portion of delegated power. Columbus found that he ftaid here to no purpofe under fuch difgraceful terms; and that his prefence at court was abfolutely necefiary to his fupport. He determined to return once more to Spain, convinced that a long abfence is mortal to one's intereft at court, and that importunity and attendance often plead better than the moft folid fervices. However, before he departed, he exerted the little remains of authority he had left,
left, to fettle every thing in fuch a manner, as to prevent thofe diforders which hitherto he had always found the certain confequence of his abfence. He built forts in all the material parts of the ifland, to retain the inhabitants in their fubjection. He eftablifhed the civil government upon a better footing, and redoubled his diligence for the difcovery of mines, which were to be the great agents in his affairs; nor did he altogether fail of fuccefs.

It was the fate of this great man to have his virtue continually exercifed with troubles and diftreffes. He continued his courfe to Spain in the latitude of 22 , not having at that time difcovered the advantageous method of running into the Northern latitudes to meet the South-weft winds: they therefore made very little way; a fcarcity enfued, in which they were reduced to fix ounces of provifion a day for each perfon. On thefe occafions the admiral fared no better than the common failor; yet in this diftrefs his hunger did not get the better of the tendernefs and humanity which diftinguifhed his character. He refufed to liften to the preffing inftances of his crew, who were very earneft in this diftrefs to have the Indian prifoners thrown overboard to leffen the confumption of provifions. In this voyage his fkill was as remarkable as his magnanimity. He had nine experienced pilots in his fleet; yet none of them could tell where D 2 they

36 An Account of the European
they were, after having been a full month from the fight of the firft land. This length of time perfuaded them they mult be very near Europe, and they were therefore for crouding fail to make land as foon as poffible. But Columbus, upon fure obfervations, maintained they were but a little to the Weftward of the Azores, and therefore ordered his fails to be llackened for fear of land. His prediction was fulfilled, and the Azores relieved them next morning. This, added to a feries of predictions and noble difcoveries, made his fkill feemz fomething prophetic, and exalted his character in this refpect above all the feamen before his time; and indeed, confidering his opportunities of improvement, and what he did himfelf to improve his art, he will perhaps appear inferior to none who have fucceeded him.

All the accufations and prejudices againft the admiral vanifhed almoft as foon as he appeared. He brought fuch teftimonies of his fidelity and good behaviour, as filenced all calumnies which arofe on that head; and the large fpecimens of gold and pearl he produced, refuted all that was faid on the poverty of the Indies. The coure was fully convinced of the importance of the new colony, the merit of its governor, and the neceflity of a fpeedy fupply. But the admiral's enemies were not idle, though they were filenced; they continued tinued to throw all manner of obftructions in his way; which was a thing not difficult in a country, where every thing is executed with much phlegm and langour, and where thofe forms and mechanical methods of bufinefs, neceffary perhaps in the common courfe of affairs, but ruinous in great defigns, are more exactly obferved, than any where elfe. It was therefore with great difficulty that he was able to procure any relief to be fent to Hifpaniola, but with much greater, and after a thoufand delays and difappointments, that he was himfelf enabled to fet out on a difcovery of more importance than any of the former.

He defigned to ftand to the Southward from the Canaries, until he fhould come under the equinoctial line, and then to proceed directly Weftward, until Hifpaniola fhould bear to the North-weft from him, to try what opening that might afford to India, or what new iflands or what continent might reward his trouble. He therefore food away to the Cape de Verd illands, and then South-weft. In this navigation a thick fog, which intercepted the light of the fun and ftars, enveloped them for feveral days; and when this cleared off, the heats were grown fo exceffive, that the men could not venture between decks. The fun being at this time nearly vertical, the heavy rains which fall at this feafon between the tropics, without abating the heat, added
$3^{8}$ An Account of the European much to their diftrefs. At laft a fmart gale fprang up, and they went before it feventeen days to the Weftward. The admiral, who could have no fecond to fupply his place, fcarce allowed himfelf a moment's fleep; but in this, as in all his voyages, had the whole burthen of every thing upon himfelf; this fatigue threw him into a fit of the gout ; but neither the fatigue nor the diforder could remove him from the deck, or make him abate of his ufual vigilance. His provifions, however, being damaged by the heat, the wine cafks many of them burft, and the wine being foured in thofe that held, obliged him to alter the courfe he intended to keep Southward, and to decline fome points to the Northweft, hoping to fall in with fome of the Caribbees, where he intended to refit and take in provifions, to enable him to continue his difcoveries. But he had not failed long, when from the round top a feaman faw land, which was an infand on the coaft of Guiana, now called Trinidad. Having paffed this inand and two others, which lie in the mouth of the great river Oronoquo, he was furprized and endangered by a phænomenon he had never feen before. The river Oronoquo, at all times very great, at this time augmented tenfold by the rains we have juft mentioned, rufhing into the ocean with an immenfe and rapid flood, meets the tide ; which rifes here to a great height,
height, and comes in with much frength; and both being pent up between the iflands, and reverberated from one to another, caufed a conflict extremely terrifying to thofe who had not been accuftomed to it, and were ignorant of the caufe, as Columbus was at this time. But failing further he found plainly that he was in frefh water, and judging rightly that it was probable no ifland could fupply fo vaft a river, he began to furpect he had difcovered the continent. But when he left the river, and found that land continued on to the Weftward for a great way, he was convinced of it. Satisfied, in fome meafure, with this difcovery, he yielded to the uneafinefs and diftreffes of his crew, and bore away for Hifpaniola, favoured by a fair wind and thofe currents which fet ftrongly to the Weftward all along the Northern coaft of South America.

In the courfe of this difcovery the admiral landed in feveral places, and traded with the inhabitants, amongft whom he found gold and pearl in tolerable plenty. Contrary to the cuftom of many navigators, who behave wherever they go as if they never intended to come there again, he every where ufed the natives with great civility, and gave them what they judged the fill value of their commodities; little bells, bits of glafs and of tin, with fome trifing apparel, being exchanged for gold-duft and pearls, and much to the

$$
D_{4}
$$

40 An Account of the European fatisfaction of both parties, who thought they had each over-reached the other, and indeed with equal reafon.

C H A P. V.
Columbus finds the Spaniards of Hippaniola in rebellion. Hismeafures to fupprefs it. Nero complaints againg bim in Spain. He is fuperfeded in the government, and fent to Spain. in trons.

1 E arrived at Hifpaniola the 19 th of Augut, 1498 , quite worn down with ficknefs and continual watching, the neceflity of which was rather increafed than diminifhed as he came nearer home, amongft fuch a multitude of illands and fhoals as filled thofe feas, at this time little known; add to this, that a current, fetting frongly Weftward towards, the continent, threatened every moment, without the greateft attention, to carry him out of his courfe. So wafted was he with the fatigue, that his brother, whom he had left in his place, farce knew him at his return. And he found that he was likely to have as little repofe upon land as at fea.

The admiral's authority had fuffered fome diminution, from the ill-judged fep of fending a check upon his motions before he left Hilpaniola; and the encouragement this gave to
all forts of murmurings and complaints againft government, fowed the feeds of a rebellion, which fprung up in the colony foon after he left it. But this rebellion was more dangeroufly formed than either of the former. For in the firft place, the rebels had regularly appointed themfelves a chief, called Francis Roldan; a man whom the admiral had left in a confiderable poft: this gave it an uniformity and credit. And fecondly, they gained the Indians to their party, by pretending to be their patrons, and the affertors of their liberty. Then, to eftablifh themfelves the more fecurely, they made a feceflion from the uncorrupted part of the colony, and fettled in another part of the ifland, which formed an afylum for allidle and feditious perfons, by whom they were continually reinforced.

In this threatening ftate of things, the admiral having found his forces in no condition to act offenfively againft the rebels, did what he could to break their force, and diffolve that union which made them formidable. He began by publifhing a free pardon for all that chofe to cancel their crimes by a timely fubmiffion. Obferving befides, that many were very defirous of returning to Spain, he gave them to underftand they might go with the fhips which brought the laft fuccours. He did not intend to perform this latter part immediately, but he knew that his offers would ftag-

42 An Account of the European ger fome; and that, in affairs of this nature, it is every thing to gain time. He wrote to court a full account of his late difcoveries, and fent famples of the wealth they yielded. He took the fame opportunity of defcribing the diftracted fate of the colony, defiring that 50 or 60 men might be fent by every fip, which he promifed to replace by as many of the rebels. He propofed this plan, left the Spanifh power fhould be weakened in thofe parts, by diminihing their men, or kept in as dangerous a ftate, by harbouring fuch as were ill difpofed to the public good. He added very judicioufly to his requeft that fome religious men and able lawyers might be fent him, as the moft effectual means of introducing and preferving obedience and order. He then entered into negociations with the chiefs of the rebels; he granted them all they demanded, and even invidioully placed their principal commander, Roldan, in fuch an office as flattered his pride, though without augmenting his power. Thus things were brought into fomething of regularity, without any ftruggling or violence; and Roldan himfelf, though in his former office of chief judge of the ifland, contributed moft of all towards bringing thore who ftood out to obedience. There arche a difference between them; and they few again to arms; but on their firf motion, Koldan, by virtue of his authority, feized, condemned, and executed feveral. By this the reft were awed, all the connexion broke off irretrievably, between the head and body of the rebels, and all done without having any part of the offence, that might be given by this feverity, charged to the admiral.

He now began juft to breathe in a little tranquillity, acquired by the fevereft labours, whilft' a new form was gathering againft him from the quarter of the court. His old implacable enemies, uniting with fome of the rebles who had lately tranfported themfelves into Spain, renewed the clamour againft him. They heaped upon him all manner of calumnies; they accufed him of a defign of fetting up for himfelf; and as they charged him in Hifpaniola with cruelty and tyranny to the Indians, here they reverfed the charge, and accufed him of a popularity amongft that people, dangerous to his and their alliance. They added to thefe, what could not fail to work on national prejudices, that Columbus was a ftranger, and had not a proper refpect for the Spanifh nobility. They complained that great debts were due to them; that all ways of recovering them were fhut up. In fhort, the king and queen never went abroad without being purfued and perfecuted, by the clamours of there pretended fuitors of juftice. Wearied out with fuch complaints, they fent a judge, with power to enquire into the admiral's conduct,

44 An Account of the European
duct, and authorized, if he fhould find the accufations proved, to fend him into Spain, and remain himfelf as governor in his room. They made it the judge's intereft to condemn him.

The judge, who was extremely poor, and had no other call but his indigence to undertake the office, no fooner landed in Hifpaniola, than he took up his lodging in the admiral's houfe, for he was then abfent. He next proceeded to feize upon all his effects; and at laft fummoned him and his brothers to appear. In the mean time, he encouraged all manner of accufations, without regarding the character of the accufers, or the probability or confiftency of their accufations. In confequence of thefe, he apprehended the admiral and his brothers, and, with the laft marks of infult and indignity, loaded them with irons, and embarked them to be tranfported prifoners into Spain.

The captain of the veffel, touched with respect for the years and great merit of Columbus, offered to take off the irons; but he did not permit it. "Since the king has com" manded, that I fhould obey his governor, " he fhall find me as obedient to this, as I " have been to all his other orders. Nothing " but his commands thall releafe me. If "t twelve years hardhip and fatigue ; if con"t tinual dangers and frequent famine; if the

## Settlements in America.

" ocean, firft opened, and five times pafled and " repaffed, to add a new world abounding with " wealth to the Spanifh monarchy; and if an " infirm premature old age, brought on by " thofe fervices, deferve thefe chains as a re" ward; it is very fitI mouldwear them to Spain, "c. and keep them by me as memorials to the " end of my life."

Great minds, though more apt to forgive injuries, perhaps, than common fouls, do not eafily lofe the memory of the wrongs that are done them. Columbus afterwards carried thefe irons with him wherever he went ; they hung conftantly in his chamber, and he ordered them to be buried with him.

The new governor made a more effectual provifion for the reward of his fervices; for, befides confifcating the greatert part of the admiral's effects, which he converted to hisown ufe; to flatter the people, he permited an unbounded liberty, by which he ruined the royal revenue, and was near ruining the colony too, paft all reparation, if the court had not recalled him in time, and fet a perfon to fucceed him of greater judgment and firmnefs, though of little more real virtue.

## C H A P. VI.

The difcoveries of Americus Vefputius, and other adventurers. What caufed the fpirit of difcovery.

A
BOUT this time the fpirit of difcovery began to fpread itfelf widely; and private adventurers, both in Spain and Portugal, ftimulated by the gold which from time to time was remitted to Europe by Columbus, made equipments at their own expence. In one of thefe the famous Americus Vefputius commanded; he had got into his hands the charts of Columbus, in his laft voyage, and he failed the fame courfe. But as he was a man of addrefs and great confidence, and was befides an able feaman and good geographer, he found a way of arrogating to himfelf the firft difcovery of the continent of America, and called it by his own name; which it has ever fince retained, though no body has any doubt concerning the real difcoverer. For this, I believe, no other reafon can be given, than that America is perhaps a better founding word than Columbia, and is more eafily pronounced with the others, in enumerating the feveral divifions of the earth; a trifling matter, and influenced by trifling caufes. But the glory of Columbus ftands upon foundations of another fort.

Pinzon,

Pinzon, one who attended the admiral in his firft voyage, equipped a fquadron at his own expence; and was the firft who croffed the line at the fide of America, and entered the great river Maranon, or the river of Amazons.

The Portuguefe, notwithftanding the pope's exclufive grant, turned their thoughts to America, and difcovered the Brazils, which make the moft valuable part of their prefent pofleffions, when they have loft what was confidered as their original right, and which never was fo advantageous to them.

What animated thefe adventurers, at the fame time that it fixes a fain upon all their characters and defigns, is that infatiable thirft of gold, which ever appeared uppermoft in all their actions. This difpofition had been a thoufand times extremely prejudicial to their affairs: it was particularly the caufe of all the confufion and rebellions in Hifpaniola : yet it is certain, that if it were not for this incentive, which kindled the fpirit of difcovery and colonization firf in Spain and Portugal, and afterwards in all parts of Europe, America had never been in the ftate it now is; nor would thofe nations ever have had the beneficial colonies, which are now eftablifhed in every part of that country. It was neceffary there fhould be fomething of an immediate and uncommon gain, fitted to frike the imaginations of men forcibly,

48 An Account of the European forcibly, to tempt them to fuch hazardous defigns. A remote profpect of commerce, and the improvement of manufactures, by extending of colonies, would never have anfwered the purpofe; thofe advantages come to be known only by reafon and deduction, and are not confequently of fo ftriking a nature. But to go out with a few baubles, and to return with a cargo of gold, is an cbject readily comprehended by any body, and was confequently purfued with vigour by all. The fpeculative knowledge of trade made no part of the ftudy of the elevated or thinking part of mankind, at that time. Now, it may be jufly reckoned amongft the liberal fciences; and it makes one of the moft confiderable branches of political knowledge. Commerce was then in the hands of a few, great in its profits, but confined in its nature. What we call the ballance of trade, was far from being well underfood; all the laws relative to commerce were every where but fo many clogs upon it. The impofts and duties charged on goods, were laid on without diftinction or judgment. Even amongft ourfelves, the moft trading and reafoning people in Europe, right notions of there matters began late, and advanced flowly. Our colonies were fettled without any view to thofe great advantages which we draw from them. Virginia was conftructed out of the wrecks of an armament

Settiements in America. 49 deftined on a golden adventure, which firt tempted us to America. And thofe who fettled New England and Maryland, meant them only as afylums from religious perfecution. So that if America had not promifed fuch an inundation of treafure, it could only have fupplied a languid commerce, which would have habituated the natives by degrees to our European manners, and fupplied them with equal arms. Then it would have been next to impoffible to have made thofe extenfive fettlements in that new world. So certain it is, that we often reap differently from what we have fown; and that there muft be fome ftrong active principle to give life and energy to all defigns, or they will languifh, let them be ever fo wifely concerted.

## C H A P. VII.

Columbus ag ain acquitted. Underitakes a fourth voyage. Difcovers the coaft of Terra Firma: and the ifthmus of Darien. Returns to Hifpaniola. His reception there. Purfues bis difcoveries to the coaft of Terra Firma. He. is driven to Famaica, and 乃iprorecked on that: ifland. His diftreffes there. The revellion of bis men, wbich be fuppreffes. He laves the iland and returns to Spain. His reception there. He dies.

NO fooner was Columbus arrived in Spain, in this difgraceful manner, than the court difavowed and highly blamed the conduct of their governor. And now, according to the giddy cuftom of men who act without plan or principle, they acquited Columbus of all the charges againft him, with as little enquiry into their validity, as they before ufed, when, upon the fame charges, they unjuitly condemned him. Reftitution and reward were promifed him, and he wanted very; few incentives to engage once more in difcoveries. His ambition was to arrive at the EaftIndies, and fo to furround the globe. This had really an influence upon his own mind, and he knew nothing could fo much influence thofe of the king and queen. On this profpect Spect he was again fitted out with a fleet, promifing to reduce both Eaft and Weft-Indies, under the dominion of their Catholic majefties.

He embarked upon his fourth voyage in May 1 502. His defign was to ftand directly for the coaft of South-America, and keep along the Northern fhore until he fhould come to the place where he heard an obfcure account of fome narrow ftreight (whether a Atreight or ifthmus was not fo clear from the accounts he had); and by this, if a ftreight, he hoped to paifs into the great South-Sea. After fo very long a voyage as his had been to America, and the difcovery of a continent which was not that of India nor that of China, he faw clearly that the maps were no longer in the leaft to be relied on; he therefore depended folely upon his own ideas. He reviewed the bearings of all the countries which his former experience or his late difcoveries had opened to him; he confidered the figure of the earth in general; he reafoned upon the ballance and diftribution of the land and water; and comparing all thefe he concluded, that; beyond the continent he had difcovered was another ocean, probably as great or greater than that he had formerly paffed; if this were fo, then it was probable too that thefe oceans had fome communication. He judged it to be near thofe places fince called Veragua and
52. An Account of the European Nombre de Dios; but not thinking his Ghips: fit for that voyage, he propofed to put into Hifpaniola to refit, and to make fome new difpofitions.

Columbus, whilft he navigated and refided in the Weft-Indies, was extremely dilizent in his obfervations upon the nature of the air, the feafons, the meteors, rains and winds; and how each of thefe feemed to affect the others; nor was he lefs fagacious in drawing prognoftics from the remarkable appearances in all; at this time he judged from obfervations that a great hurricane was approaching. Before he entered the harbour, he notified his arrival to Obando the governor, with the nature of his defign and the condition of his veffels; defiring at the fame time that the fleet, which he underftood to be on the point of fetting fail for Europe, fhould in confideration of the approaching hurricane defer their departure for fome days. But it was his deftiny that ingratitude fould purfue himevery where, and perfecute him in every fhape. For the governor, without any caufe, not only refufed to hearken to his advice about the failing of the fhips, but abfolutely denied him permiffion to enter into harbour, to fave his life in that illand which he himfelf had difcovered and fubdued. He had nothing to do but to draw up as clofe to the fhore as he could. The ftorm came on the next night; but Providence

$$
\text { Settlements in America. } 53
$$

dence, favouring his innocence and afifting his capacity, brought him fafe through it, though as terrible a ftorm as had ever happened in thofe feas. The fleet of twenty fail, which againt his advice had put to fea, fuffered the punifhment due to their temerity. Only four efcaped the ftorm, fixteen perifhed. Amongft thofe which were loft, was the fhip which carried back that governor to Spain, who had fent Columbus thither in fo oppreffive and fcandalous a manner ; amongft the four that were faved, was one that had on board fome treafure, all that could be refcued from the pillage of the admiral's fortune. So that whilft he was mortified at this fhameful inftance of human gratitude, Heaven feemed to declare in his favour, and to condemn and punifh it. His character was highly raifed by the prediction of the ftorm, and by his behaviour in it; for to his, and his brother's good conduct, the fafety of his little fleet was juftly attributed. His brother was a navigator and philofopher, fecond only to the admiral, very ufeful to his affairs, and a comfort and affiftance in all his misfortunes, by his capacity and the goodnefs of his heart.

After he had weathered the ftorm, he left this ifland, in which he had fo furprizing an inftance of ingratitude, in purfuit of more matter to employ it. In this voyage he dif-

54 An Account of ibe European covered all the coaft of Terra Firma to the ifthmus of Darien, where he hoped to have found a paffage to the South-Sea. In this he was difappointed, but he was not difappointed in the other part of his project; for every where as he advanced, he became more fenfible of the value of his difcoveries on the continent. He found a people more civilized and more abounding in gold than the illanders. He entered a harbour, which from its excellence he called Porto Bello, well known fince as one of the greateft openings by which the Spaniff commerce is carried on between the two worlds. Here the admiral defigned to eftablifh a colony, under the command of his brother, propofing to return to Europe himfelf to obtain the requifites for a compleat fettlement. But the avarice and infolence of his men raifed the country upon him, and obliged him to relinquif his defign, without having an opportunity of doing any thing: more than fhewing his judgment in the choice of the fituation, and his own and brother's bravery in extricating their men from the cafamities in which their folly had involved them.

Driven from hence, and finding his veffels in fo bad a condition that it was by no means advifeable to proceed upon further difcoveries, be quitted the continent, after having difcoyered the Eaftern fide of the ifhmus of Da-
rien, and the whole fhore as far as Gracios - Dios in the gulph of Honduras. He then ftood over to Hifpaniola. His voyage was made under a thoufand difficulties of the fevereft kind; the veflels fo leaky, that the crew had not a moment's refpite from the pump, and fcarce any provifion remaining to refrefh them after their labours. To compleat the fum of their calamities a violent ftorm arofe, in which the fhips fell foul of one another. But though he providentially weathered this ftorm, it was now fcarcely poffible to keep his fhip above water, and he was glad to make Jamaica, where he was a fecond time relieved from the greateft dangers and diftreffes.

But a diftrefs of almoft as bad a nature exercifed his invention here. His hhips were abfolutely unfit for fervice, beyond all poffibility of being repaired; no means of getting new; the inhabitants fufpicious, and the ill behaviour of his men gave daily occafion to increafe thofe fufpicions. In this diftrefs, he prevailed upon fome of the hardieft and moft faithful of them to pafs over in a canoo to Hifpaniola, to reprefent his calamitous fituation to the governor, and to beg veffels to carry them off.

Eight months did the admiral remain in this inland, without the leaft intelligence from his meffengers, or affiftance from the governor. E 4

The

## 56 An Account of the European

The natives grew exafperated at the delay of the Spaniards and the weight of fubfifting them, which was a heavy burthen on the poverty of the Indians. Provifions therefore came in very fparingly. Things even threatened to grow much worfe; for the feamen, who are at beft unruly, but think that all difcipline ceafes the moment they fet foot on land, mutinied in great numbers. By this mutiny the admiral's authority and furength was confiderably weakened, whilf the natives were exafperated by the diforders of the mutineers; but Columbus found means to recover his authority, at leaft among the Indians. Knowing there would fortly be a vifible eclipfe of the moon, he fummoned the principal perfons in the illand; and by one who underttood their language told them, that the God whom he ferved, and who created and preferves all things in heaven and earth, provoked at their refufing to fupport his fervants, intended a fpeedy and fevere judgment upon them, of which they fhould fhortly fee manifeft tokens in the heavens, for that the moon would, on the night he marked, appear of a bloody hue, an emblem of the deftruction that was preparing for them. His prediction, which was ridiculed for the time, when it came to be accomplified ftuck the barbarians with great terror. They brought him plenty of provifions; they fell at his feet, and befought him in the moft fupplicating ftile to deprecate the evils which threatened them. He took their provifions, comforted them, and charged them to attone for their paft fin by their future generofity.

He had a temporary relief by this ftratagem, but he faw no profpect of getting out of the ifland, and purfuing thofe great purpofes to which he had devoted his life. The mutiny of his men was in danger of growing general, when every thing feemed to be fettled by the fight of a fhip in the harbour, fent by Obando, the governor of Hifpaniola. The governor refolved not only to abandon, but to infult this great man in his misfortunes. The captain of the veffel was a mortal enemy to the admiral, and one of the perfons principally concerned in thofe rebellions, which had formerly given him fo much trouble. The defign of this captain was only to be a witnefs of the diftrefs of his affairs; for he came afhore, forbidding his crew all manner of communication with the admiral or his men; and after delivering to Columbus an empty letter of compliment, embarked without even flattering him with the leaft hope of relief.

Thus abandoned, his firmnefs and prefence of mind alone did not forfake him. The arrival of this fhip for a moment reconciled his men to obedience ; but when they faw it depart,

58 An Account of the European
part, they were almoft unanimoufly on the point of faking off all authority, and abandoning themfelves to the moft defperate courfes. The admiral, without betraying the leaft fign of dirappointment or grief, told them in a chearful manner, that he had a promife of an immediate fupply: that he did not depart in this fhip, becaufe fhe was too fmall to carry off all the Spaniards who were with him; and that he was refolved not to leave the ifland until every man of them might enjoy the fame conveniency. The eafy and compofed air of the admiral himfelf, and the care he manifefted for his people, fuperior to his own prefervation, reconciled their minds, and made them attend their fate with patience. But he knew his delay might be very tedious in this iffand, and that as long as there remained a receptacle to which every ill humour among his men might gather, his affairs would grow worfe every day. He found thofe that faill adhered to him firmly attached to his caufe; he therefore came to a refolution of taking vigorous meafures with the reft. He fent his brother, a fenfible and refolute man, with a proper force, and well armed, to treat with them; and in cafe of obfinacy to compel them to obedience. They met, and the captain of the mutineers, grown infolent with a long courfe of licentioufnefs and rapine, not only rejected the admiral's propofal, propofal, but offered violence to his brother; who ufing this as a fignal to his men, prepared for fuch an accident; they fell upon the rebels with fo much refolution, that ten lay dead in a moment with their chief; difordered by the unexpected attack, the reft fled, and foon after were obliged to fubmit.

Thus the admiral pacified every thing with equal fpirit and addrefs, fometimes giving way to the ftorm, and temporizing when he doubted his ftrength; but when he was affured of it, always employing it with refolution and effect; turning every incident, even the moft unfavourable, to his advantage; and watching every change of nature, and every motion of the human mind, to employ them in his purpofes. It is the principal thing which forms the character of a great man, to be rich in expedients; the ufe Columbus made of the eclipfe was truely ingenious. It may be faid, that fuch a thing cannot be imitated amongft a civilized people. I grant it. But the way to imitate great men is not to tread in their fteps, but to walk in their manner. There is no people who have not fome points of ignorance, weaknefs, or prejudice, which a penetrating mind may difcover, and ufe as the moft powerful inftruments in the execution of his defigns. Such a knowledge as this, is the only thing which gives one man a real fuperiority over another; and he who underftands the paffions

60 An Account of the European paffions of men, and can entirely command his own, has the principal means of fubduing them in his hands.

The admiral might have fpent his whole life in this miferable exile, if a private man, moved with efteem for his merit, and compaffion to his misfortunes, had not fitted out a fhip for his relief. This brought him to Hifpaniola. The governor, who refufed to contribute any thing to his coming, when he came received him with that overacted complaifance and fhew of friendfhip, which fo often fucceeds the greateft infolence in bafe minds, and which they practife with fo little thame and remorfe to the perfons they have before loaded with the greateft injuries. The admiral bore this like every thing elfe; and, convinced that a difpute with a governor in his own jurifdiction would bring him little advantage or honour, haftened every thing for his departure to Spain, where he arrived after a voyage in which he was toffed by moft terrible ftorms, and failed feven hundred leagues after he had loft his main-maft.

He was now grown old, and feverely afslicted with the gout. The queen his patronefs was dead; and the king, of a clofe and diffembling difpofition, and a narrow mind, was the only perfon he had to footh his misfortunes, or pay the reward which was due to his labours. But he received neither comfort

Settlements in America. 6 i comfort nor reward. The performance of his contract was deferred upon frivolous pretences; and he employed the clofe of his life, as he had done the active part of it, in a court follicitation; the moft grievous of all employments to any man, the moft hopelefs to an old man. Vanquifhed at laft by years, fatigues, and difappointments, he died with thofe fentiments of piety, which fupported him through the misfortunes of his life, and added a finifhing, which nothing elfe could give to his greatnefs of mind, and all his other virtues.

## C H A P. VIII.

The character of Columbus. Some refiexions on the conduct of the court of Spain.

HEnceforward, in treating of the progrefs of the Spanifh difcoveries and arms, inftead of defigns laid in fcience, and purfued with a benevolent heart and gentle meafures; we are but too often to hew an enthufiaftic avarice, urging men forward to every act of cruelty and horror. The character of this firft difcoverer was extremely different from that of all with whom he dealt, and from that of moft of thofe who purfued his difcoveries and conquefts; fome with a vigour and conduct equal, but all with virtues

62 An Account of the European virtues very much inferior. In his character hardly is any one of the components of a truly great man wanting. For to the ideas of the moft penetrating philofopher, and a fcheme built upon them worthy of a great king, he joined a conftancy and patience, which alone could carry it into execution, with the fortune of a private man. Continual forms at fea, continual rebellions of a turbulent people on thore, vexations, difappointments, and cabals at court, were his lot all his life; and thefe were the only reward of fervices which no favours could have rewarded fufficiently. His magnanimity was proof againft all thefe, and his genius furmounted all the difficulties they threw in his way, except that of his payment, the point in which fuch men ever meet with the worft fuccefs, and urge with the leaft ability. That furprizing art, poffeffed by fo few, of making every accident an inftrument in his defigns; his nice adjuftment of his behaviour to his circumftances, temporizing, or acting vigoroufly as the occafion required, and never letting the occafion itfelf pafs by him; the happy talent of concealing and governing his own pafions, and managing thofe of others; all thefe confpire to give us the higheft idea of his capacity. And as for his virtues, his difinterefted behaviour, his immoveable fidelity to the ungrateful crown he ferved, the juft policy of his dealing with the Indians, his caution der behaviour to them when conquered, which merited him the glorious title of their father, together with his zeal to have them inftructed in the truths of religion, raife him to the elevated rank of thofe few men whom we ought to confider as examples to mankind, and ornaments to human nature.

I hope it will be forgiven me if I add a remark upon the conduct of the court of Spain with regard to this great man. Though, as we faw all along, this conduct was equally unjuft and impolitic, forry I am, that no leffon of inftruction can be drawn from the event, which was in all refpects as fortunate, as the meafures purfued were ungrateful and imprudent. But there was a coincidence of events at that time, which does not always happen fo opportunely to juftify an ungrateful and narrow policy. It is certain that fome men are fo poffeffed with their defigns, that, when once engaged, nothing can difcourage them in the purfuit. But great and frequent difcouragements are examples to others, which will at leaft certainly have an effect, and will terrify men from forming fuch defigns at all. Then the fpirit of invention and enterprize dies away; then things begin to ftagnate and to corrupt; for it is a rule as invariable in politics as it is in nature, that a want of proper motion does not breed reft and ftability, but a motion

64 An Account of the European
of another kind; a motion unfeen and inteftine, which does not preferve but deftroy. The beft form and fettlement of a ftate, and every regulation within it, obeys the fame univerfal law ; and the only way to prevent all things from going to decay, is by continually aiming to better them in fome refpect or other (fince if they are not better, they will furely be worfe), and to afford an attentive ear to every project for this purpofe. I am fenfible that it muft frequently happen, that many of thefe projects will be chimerical in themfelves, and offered by people of an appearance and manner not very prejudicing in their favour. But then I am fatisfied too, that thefe men muft in the nature of things have fomething odd and fingular in their character, who expofe themfelves, and defert the common and certain roads of gain, in purfuit of advantages notcertain to the public, and extremely doubtful to themfelves.

It is equally true, that, if fuch people are encouraged, a number of vifionary fchemes will be offered. But it is the character of pride and lazinefs to reject all offers, becaufe fome are idle, as it is a weaknefs and credulity to liften to all without diftinction. But furely, if judgment is to have any fhare in our conduct, it is the province of judgment to fift, to examine, to diftinguifh the ufeful from the foolinh, the feafible from the impracticable,

## Setthements in America. 65

cable, and even in the midft of the vifions of a fruitful and difordered brain, to pick out matter which a wife man will know how to qualify and turn to ufe, though the inventor did not. Cromwell, partly from his circumftances, but more from his genius and difpofition, received daily a number of propofals of this kind, which always approached him in a fanaticaldrefs, and were mixed frequently with matters the moft remote from probability and good fenfe; and we know that he made a fignal ufe of many things of this kind.

Colbert fpent much of his time in hearing every fcheme for the extending of commerce, the improvement of manufactures, and the advancement of arts; fpared no pains or expence to put them in execution, and bountifully rewarded and encouraged the authors of them. By thefe means France advanced during the reign of Lewis the fourteenth, and under this minifter, more than it had done in many reigns before; and by thefe means, in the midft of wars which brought that kingdom and all Europe to the brink of deftruction, amidft many defaults in the royal character and many errors in his government, a feed of induftry and enterprize was fown, which, on the firft refpite of the public calamities, and even while they oppeffed that nation, rofe to produce that floumining internal and external commerce and power, that diftinguines

Vol. I. F lirance,

66 An Account of the European
France, and forms its ftrength at this day, though a lefs active reign and minifters of a different character have fucceeded. On the contraty, it was always the character of the court of Spain to proceed very flowly, if at all, in any improvement; and to receive fchemes for that purpofe with coldnefs and difdain. The effects upon the power of that monarchy were at laft anfwerable. With regard to America, the conqueft as well as the difcovery was owing wholly to private men; the court contributed nothing but pretenfions and patents.

## CHAP. IX.

The difcoveries and conquefts of Balboa. Velaf: quez Sends Cortes on the Mexican expedition. The fate of the Mexican empire. Cortes makes an alliance with the Tlafcalans.

AN ancient painter drew a fatyrical picture of Cimon the Athenian. He reprefented this commander afleep, and Fortune drawing a net over cities to put them into his pofleffion. There never were princes to whom this reprefentation could be applied with more juftice, than to king Ferdinand and his fucceffor the emperor Charles. Without forming any plan in the cabinet, without iffuing a penny out of their treafury, without fend-
ing a regiment from their troops, private adventurers amongt their fubjects put them into poffeffion of a greater, and a more wealthy territory, than ever the moft celebrated conquerors had acquired by their valour, or their wifdom. Nor was this conqueft more extraordinary for the trivial means by which it was accomplifhed, than for the fhortnefs of the. time in which it was effected; for from the departure of Columbus, which was in the year 1492, to the entire reduction of Chill, which was in 1541, feven great kingdoms, inhabited by a vaft number of warlike and wealthy nations, were made to bow under the Spanin yoke. After the difcoveries of Columbus had enlarged the fphere of induftry to active minds, fuch a fpirit of enterprize went abroad, that not only thofe perfons whofe indigence might have driven them from their native country, but perfons of the firft rank went over to fettle in America. Gold was the fpur to all thofe adventurers, of whatever rank; and this, with a romantic firit of chivalry, made the greateft hazards appear but common matters in their eyes. And indeed in a country wholly uncivilized, under the burning zone, and in many places extremely. unhealthy, the temperance of the Spaniards, their hardinefs under fatigue, and the patience and perfeverance whick make the mof fhining part of their character, enabled them

68 An Account of the European
to engage in enterprizes, and to furmount difficulties, to which any other people had certainly been unequal.

Vafco Nunez de Balboa made a confiderable figure amongft thefe adventurers; he was a man of a graceful prefence, a liberal education, a hardy conftitution, and that kind of popular bravery, which recommends a man who engages in defperate expeditions, where he muft have more authority from his perfon than his place. This man firt furrounded Cuba, conquered, and left it. He did not there find the treafures which he expected. He therefore relinquifhed the gleanings of this field to thofe who had a more moderate ambition, and a more faving indurtry. He fought new ground, he followed the tracks of Columbus to Darien, gained the friendhip of fome of the Caziques, and conquered others. He was the firft who difcovered the South-Sea. He fettled a colony upon that coaft, and built the city of Panama. But according to the fate of all the firf adventurers in this new world, indeed according to the fate of moft who engage in new undertakings, he never lived to reap the fruit of his labours. He found himfelf fuperfeded by one who had only difcernment enough of his merit to raife his jealoufy and envy, and who could make no other ure of the difcoveries of this great man, than to increafe his own private
private fortune. This man was a politiclan and a courtier, and having in feveral inftances barely injured Balboa, he was too wife to flop there, but under a pretended form of juftice cut off his head, and confifcated his eftate.

Some time after the fettlement of Cuba, Don James Velafquez obtained the governmont; a man of good fenfe in common affairs, but fo much miftaken, as to imagine he could act a great part by deputy; and that too in circumftances, wherein a man who had but little capacity could do him but little fervice, and he that could do much would certainly do it for himfelf. The continent of America was now very well known, and the fame of the greatnefs and wealth of the Mexican empire fpread every where. This infpired Velafquez with a fcheme of reducing come part of this opulent country under his obedience. He pitched upon Fernando Cortes to command in this expedition, in which he certainly made a very right judgment. There was no man amongft the Spaniards, who to an adventurours difpofition, then common to them all, knew fo well to join a cool and fteady conduct, to gain love whilft he preferved reflect; not to Shift his fchemes according to occafions, but perfifting uniformly in a well-judged defign, to make every inferior action and event fubfervient to it; to urge fill forward; to ex-

70 An Account of the European
tricate himfelf out of difficulties into which he was brought by bold actions, not by mean fubterfuges, but by actions yet boider. This was the character of the man already in high reputation, whom Velafquez chofe to conquer for him.

The embarkment was made at St. Jago de Cuba, and Cortes was to take in fome reinforcements at the Havanna. But he was hardly departed, when Velafquez grew jealous of him; and, without confidering that Cortes was of that heroic difpofition in which a blind obedience is rarely a principal ingredient, he took the ill-judged ftep of removing him from the command of an army, which in fome fort might be confidered as his own, fince he had much influence on the foldiers, and a confiderable part of the expence of the armament had been fupplied by himfelf. When this order, which was to deprive him of his command, arrived to Cortes, he was not long before he came to a refolution. He explained the whole matter to his foldiers; he fhewed them how uncertain the intentions of Velafquez were, and how much all their hopes were like to be fruftrated by the inconftancy of his difpofition. The event was prepared. The foldiers declared to $a$ man, that they were fubjects only to the king of Spain, and knew no commander but Cortes. The army and the general, general, thus bound to each other by their mutual difobedience, failed for Mexico.

The empire of Mexico was at that time governed by a prince called Montezuma, the eleventh who reigned from the firf monarch who had conquered the country. The empire was elective, and the merir of Montezuma had procured him the election. A prince of capacity and courage, but artful, hypocritical, and cruel. This empire, founded on conqueft, was increafed by his victories. Dy himfelf, or by his generals, he had abfolutely fubdued feveral kingdoms and provinces; feveral were made tributary, and others, which were not abfolutely fubdued, were influenced by his power to an entire obedience to his will. His armies were the beft in that part of the world, and prodigioufly numerous. In this fituation, and fo headed, was the empire of the Mexicans, when Cortes came to prove its frength, with an army of no more than five hundred foot, and not quite fixty horfe. He did not come a franger into the country, to encounter a force which he dared to engage only becaufe he was ignorant of it. He had long made every porfible enquiry from the Spaniards and Indians in every circumftance of its internal weaknefs or power; its allies, its enemies, and the interefts which determined them to be allies or enemies. Weighing all thefe, and knowin that, along with great hopes, great dangers likeF 4
wife

72 Ail Account of the European wife lay before him, he made his retreat yet more dangerous by difobedience to the governor of Cuba; and when he landed on the continent, he made it impoflible, for he burned his fhips. But though he had made a retreat impolfible, he had fomething more to encourage him to go forward, than the impoftibility of retiring. He had great hopes that many of thofe ftates, who were kept in a forced fubjection or a lavifh dread of Moniezuma, would gladly turn this new and alarming appearance from themfelves againft that monarch, and, under the banner of thefe formidable ftrangers, arm themfelves to thake off the ancient tyranny, which always appears the wort, without forefeeing confequences, to which morecivilized nations have frequently been as blind as they. It happened according to his expectations.

The Zempoallans, a nation tributary to Montezuma, as foon as they had fufficient proofs of the power of the Spaniards, at the expence of feveral of their neighbours, who attempted to oppofe their progrefs, threw off the Miexican yoke, gladly put themfelves under the protection of Cortes, and earned it by the large reinforcements which they added to his army. Montezuma was foon made acquainted. with thefe meafures. For, according to the cuftom of that well-regulated kingdom, he had pofts fo ftationed, that in a little time he had notice of whatever happened in the
remote parts of his empire. The difpatches which were fent him, were painted cloaths, exactly reprefenting every circumfance of the bufinefs of which he was to be informed; the figures were interperfed with characters to explain what muft neceflarily be wanting in the picture. So far, but no farther, had this people advanced in the art of writing. As well informed as the emperor was of every particular of this invafion, and of the defection of his tributaries, he acted not at all conformably to the greatnefs of his former exploits. He took the worft method which a great prince ever did upon fuch án occafion, which was, to temporize. He let the Spaniards fee, by fome trifling arts which he ufed to oppofe them, that he did not look upon them as his friends, and at the fame time neglected to act againft them as fo formidable an enemy required. They made daily advances in the country. His enemies were encouraged, his tributaries made infolent, and his fubjects and allies utterly difpirited; whilf the Spaniards, in a variety of engagements which they had with the petty princes of the country, raifed their reputation by a train of victories, and began to be confidered as invincible. Cortes, like the great commander he was, took advantage of this irrefolute difpofition in Montezuma, and ufed every poffible means to cherifh it. He always fent back what

74 An Account of the European what prifoners his new allies had taken, with prefents, and every profeffion of efteem and regard to their mafter, and with the ftrongef affurance of a defire of preferving peace ; requefting to fee Montezuma, and to confer with him upon fome matters which he faid he had in charge to deliver to him from his mafter the emperor of the Romans.

There was at that time a celebrated republic on the coaft of Mexico, towards the gulph, called Tlafcla. This people were faid to befo powerful, as to be able to arm four hundred thoufand men. Powerful as they were, tho' not fubdued, they were yet awed by the greatnefs of the Mexicans. This awe, or perhaps a better policy, induced them to give a check to the Spaniards. But, in the manner of Montezuma's proceedings, they would not oppofe them publicly, and therefore could not oppofe them effectually. Some nations, on whom they had prevailed to fall upon the Spaniards, were over and over again defeated, together with thofe troops the Tlafcalans had fent clandeftinely to their affiftance. At laft, by degrees, declaring themfelves more openly, as the danger preffed them, they drew a large army into the field, which was routed by the troops of Cortes; few indeed in number, but infinitely fuperior in arms, and now grown familiar with victory. The confequencc of this battle was the alliance of the Tlafcalans with their
their conqueror, which they entered into with the lefs difficulty, as they were to ferve againft the Mexicans, and might now hope to ferve with fuccefs. Cortes, however, did not chufe to truft this untried and forced alliance too far, nor at the fame time to deprive himfelf entirely of the fuccour it produced. He therefore took a middle courfe, and, accepting three thoufand of their men, he held on his rout to Mexico.

## C H A P. X.

Cortes builds La Vera Cruz. He marches to Mexico. His reception by Montezuma. Cortes imprijons Montezuma. That prince's fratagem to gain bis liberty; the confequence of $i t$.

B
EFORE Cortes began his expedition to 'Mexico, he had built a ftong fortrefs at the principal port on the coaft, to open a paffage for fuccours, whenever his fuccefs fhould make intereft enough to procure them. This he called La Vera Cruz, and it has fince become a city, remarkable for the great traffic carried on between thefe opulent countries and Old Spain.

During the Tlafcalan war, in which the Spaniards fuffered fomething and had every thing to apprehend, Montezuma took no fteps, but

76 Ar Account of the European
but lay by, watching the event, in hopes that the Tlafcalans might defeat the troops of Cortes at their own expence; or, if the Spaniards proved victorious, he might then have the merit of nothavingufed hoftilities againft them. He lof both parties by this double conduct; fuch an infidious neutrality betrays nothing but the weak policy of him who ufes it. However, as a fair correfpondence ftill fubfifted between them, he ufed every means he could to diffuade Cortes from his propofed journey to Mexico. At laft he took a ftep, worfe judged than all the bad ones he had hitherto taken. He fent to the Spaniards a very large and magnificent prefent, of every thing his dominions afforded valuable, but principally a vaft quantity of gold and precious ftones; offering at the fame time yet more, and perfuading them to return to their own country. If any perfon in the army was unwilling before this to proceed, he now changed his mind. All were convinced that they ought to advance with fpeed to poffers the fountain of that wealth, of which this rich donation was but an inconfiderable rivulet.

Montezuma, baffed in all his fchemes to keep the Spaniards at a diftance, having ufed himfelf to fhifting meafures until they were in a degree grown habitual, found Cortes at the gates of Mexico before he was refolved how he fhould receive him. It was now almoft
moft too late for force. He threfore diffembled his concern with the beft grace he could, and received him with all the honours a monarch can beftow, when he would difplay his own magnificence and fhew his fenfe of extraordinary merit. Cortes was lodged in a palace fpacious and grand, after the manner of the country. All his Spaniards were lodged with him ; but he took care to place a train of artillery at his gate.

Thus pofted without a blow in the heart of this great city, the capital of the new world, he was for a while at a lofs what meafures to purfue, for fecuring himfelf in a conqueft of fuch importance. Having received more than he could reafonably have afked, there was no caufe of complaint, and confequently no advantage to be colourably taken. He had only to wait for fome of thofe critical incidents, upon whofe ufe all great matters depend, and without which the greateft genius muft be at a ftand. It was not long before one of thefe occurred.

Two Tlafcalans arrived in difguife at Mexico, who brought him an account that a general of Montezuma had attacked fome of his confederate Indians; that the garrifon of Vera Cruz had gone out to their defence ; and that, though the Mexicans were repulfed with lofs, the Spaniards were greatly endangered, many wounded, and one killed, whofe head,
head, by the order of Montezuma, was carried through all the cities and villages of their country, to deftroy the reverence in which they held the Spaniards, and to undeceive them in a notion they had conceived, that thefe ftrangers were immortal. This intelligence alarmed Cortes. He knew that opinion was one of the ftrongeft fupporters of his little force; that things of this kind never ftop at their beginnings; that Montezuma, while he careffed him in his city, was disjoining his allies, and diftreffing his garrifon abroad; and that no time was to be loft in dilatory counfels; that he muft keep alive the memory of his former explots. He therefore took a refolution worthy of a brave man, in a difficulty made for his capacity. He armed himfelf in the beft manner, and with five of the moft faithful and beft refolved of his officers, went directly to the palace of Montezuma. Thirty of his men attended at fome diftance. Guards of Spaniards were placed at the principal avenues to the palace.

It was ufual for Montezuma's guards to withdraw, out of refpect, when he had any conference with Cortes. On this occafion, as foon as he was admitted to audience, he charged the emperor with the outrages committed by his orders, in terms of great refentment. The emperor difavows them. But

Cortes,

## Setteements in America.

Cortes, after having paid him the compliment of not fuppofing him capable of 10 mean a diffimulation, affured him, that he was himfelf entirely fatisfied of his innocence; but that others had fears which were not eafily removed: that, to fatisfy the Spaniards, he mut give fome folid proof of his confidence in them; which he could effectually do no otherwife than by his removing without delay to their quareers. A requeft of this nature ftartled Montezuma, who never was ufed to any voice but that of the humbleft fubmiffion. However, he faw plainly that Cortes did not make fo extraordinary a requeft but with a refolution of making it be complied with. He faw the neceffity, and he yielded to it.

Thus was the metropolis of a vaft and powerful empire, inhabited by an innumerable multiude of warlike people, entered without refiftance by an handful of men, who came to overturn its libery. And thus was one of the greateft princes on earth, renowned for his wifdom and valour, feized in his palace, in the midft of his capital, at noonday, and carried prifoner, without noife or violence, by fix perfons, to be difpoled of at their pleafure.

The people, confounded and enraged to find one whom they always ufed to revere as a god, treated in this unworthy manner,

80 An Account of the European furrounded the quarters of the Spaniards to punifh this facrilege, and refcue their captive prince. But Cortes, who well underftood the confequence of the fteps he had taken, was not alarmed. He knew that he had now in his hands an engine, which was capable of doing any thing. Montezuma went out to appeafe the people, affured them that he was there of choice, and (which was true) that the Spaniards were wanting in no inftance of refpect due to his character and dignity.
This appeafed and difperfed the people. But Montezuma, whofe unfortunate circumftances obliged him to act as an inftrument to his own captivity, could enjoy no reft, though allowed the attendance of the pricipal officers of his court, and indulged by the Spaniards in every thing but his liberty. Long revolving, he at laft contrived a fcheme, which he judged, without his appearing to occur with them, might alarm his fubjects with a fenfe of their danger, or oblige the Spaniards to depart by the reafonablenefs of his propofals. He had always liberty of going abroad with a guard of Spaniards under pretence of doing him honour. He now defired to hold a council of the ftates of his empire, that in concurrence they might fatisfy Cortes and his affociates in the ampleft manner. This council was convened, ned, in which Montezuma, in a premeditated fpeech, fet forth the origin of his nation; the prophecies extant among them, that a people of the fame race hould arrive, to whom this empire fhould be fubject; that the people were now arrived who were the object of thofe prophecies, and fprung from this origin, to whom the gods had deftined univerfal empire, and who, by their great accomplifhments and furprizing bravery, merited their high deftination: then he folemnly declared himfelf tributary to the emperor of the Romans; he exhorted his people on their part to a due obedience; and ended by telling them, that, as he had himfelf prepared a prefent from his treafures worthy of this emperor, he expected that every one of them, in proporticn to his ability, would teftify his loyalty to their new mater, and his regard to the merit of his general and thofe brave men that attended him, that they might be enabled to depart fpeedily to their own country, with that opinion of their brethren the Mexicans, which their affection to them, and their obedience to their common mafter, deferved.

At firft a dead filence fucceeded this harangue ; the whole afiembly were confounded and frruck dumb with grief, indignation and furprife. Then followed a mixed cry, as each perfon was affected by fome particular part Vol. I.

82 An Account of the European
of the general calamity. The luftre of their empire was tarnifled, their religion to be profained, their freedom furrendered, their emperor degraded; what was worfe, degraded by himfelf; could they believe their ears? Was it Montezuma who had fpoken in fuch a manner?

The defign of Montezuma was until this moment a fecret to Cortes; he was furprifed and fomething chagrined at an artifice, the invention of which he now penetrated very clearly. But his furprife did not confound or perplex him in the part he faw it was proper for him to act. Without any embarraffment, he feconded the harangue of Montezuma by a fpeech, which was well interpreted, wherein he furongly urged the propriety, and infinuated the neceffity, of an entire obedience to their prince and an imitation of his conduct. Difordered as the affembly was, yet ftill held by a facred reverence to their emperor, influenced by the hope of the fudden departure of the Spaniards, and referving themfelves for a better occafion, they followed Montezuma's example, and paid homage to Cortes, in that dumb and fullen fubmiffion with which fierce fpirits yeld to neceffity. He received it, and thanked them, as a man thanks his debtor for a ready payment.

Cortes faw that this empty homage fecured him nothing; but he knew that the gold, which was to accompany it, would be of real fervice in cancelling the ill impreffions made by his difobedience, in Spain. In Mexico he might look upon himfelf as fecure; he had the perfon of the emperor in his hands; he had his forces in the capital; he had lately fruck a terror into all, by feizing the general, who had committed hoftilities againft the Spaniards. He got the emperor to difavow his conduet, and condemn him as a traitor. By their joint authority, this unhappy man, guilty of nothing but obedience to his lawful matter and zeal for his country, was burned alive in the public fquare of Mexico. But neither this horrid example, nor the imprifonment of their emperor, nor the late acknowleagment of the emperor Charles, was fufficient to make the Mexicans infenfible to the difgrace they fuffered, nor of the danger which hung over them. They began to confult how they might deliver themfelves. Some propofed to cut off the communication with the continent, and hold the Spaniards befieged in their quarters; for the city of Mexico is an ifland in a great lake, and communicates with the continent by four great caufeways, extremely curious for contrivance and folidity. Whilf they were ripening their fchemes, a report came to Cortes, that G 2 fome

84 An Account of the Europeain fome words had dropt from a Mexican concerning the practicability of deftroying one of thefe caufeways. From this word (for he heard no more) this watchful and fagacious commander judged of the whole contrivance. Without however taking notice of it publicly, he immediately orders two brigantines to be built to fecure his retreat, if a retreat fhould prove the wifeft meafure. In the mean time he keps a frict difcipline in his army ; and to preferve reverence from the Indians, he prohibited their approaching his quarters when his men were afleep, and feverely punifhed thofe of his foldiers who flept out of the times and places appointed for that purpofe. All this while no preparations for his departure.

## C H A P. XI.

The attempis of Montezuma to make the Spaniards leave Mexico. The arrival of Narvaez to take the command from Cortes. Cortes leaves Mexico. Defeats and takes Narvaez prifoner. The Spaniards in Mexico befieged. Cortes raifes the fiege. IMoniezuma is killed.

MONTEZUMA, fick with impatience of his confinement, and feeing that he daily loft his authority amongft the people by the pufillanimous appearance of his 4 conduct,
conduct, as foon as he perceived that any fpirited action on his fide would be feconded with equal firit by his fubjects, roufed his dormant magnanimity, and, in spite of the condition he was in, fent for Cortes, and addreffed him in this manner: "Cortes, the defires of my fubjects, my own dignity, and the commands of my gods, require that you fhould depart my empire. You are fenfible how much I valued your friendfhip, and how effectually I have fhewn that I valued it. But, after fo many profeffions of good-will upon your fide, and fo many proofs of it upon mine, after every pretence of bufinefs is over, wherefore do yon delay your return? 1 have yielded homage to your mafter, I am ready to obey him ; I have fent him prefents (or fhall I call it a tribute?) worthy of myfelf and of him : your whole army is loaded, even to an inconvenience, with their darling gold. Would they have more? they fhall have more. But then, when they fhall have fpoken their largeft wifhes, and fatisfied their moft eager defires, I infift upon it that they depart immediately; or they may find, in fpite of the condition I am in, of which condition, for your fake and for my own, I fhall fpeak but little, that Montezuma has yet courage enough to vindicate his honour, and friends in Mexico who will not fail to revenge the wrongs he fhall fuffer."
86. An Account of the European

Cortes perceived fomething of an unufual refolution and fernnefs in the emperor's countenance whilf he fpoke. He therefore fent orders, before the interpreter began to explain his fpeech, that the Spaniards fhould ftand to their arms, and wait his commands. His anfwer was refolute, but not fuch as to drive the emperor to defoair. He lamented the jealoufy which their common enemies had occafioned; that, for his part, he was fe.cured from all fear, by his own courage and the bravery of his own troops; but, fince he was fo unfortunate as to find he could not longer enjoy the honour of a converfation he hadi fuch reafon to effeem, confiftently with the emperor's repofe, he would depart as foon as Mips could be built, for on landing he had been obliged to burn his own. This anfwer foothed Nontezuma; he refumed his good humour, he promifed to load his army with gold at his departure, and gave immediate orders that every thing thould be prepared for fitting out the fhips in the fpeedieft and ampleft manner. But Cortes gave orders, which were full as well obeyed, to the perion he appointed for the equipment, to delay it upon every pofible pretence. He expected daily the return of the meffengers he had fent into Spain, to follicit his pardon and fuccours, Withe the continuance of the command

Whilat

Whilf he was entertained with thefe expectations, and with finding out pretences to defer his departure, an exprefs arrived from Sandoval, his governor at La Vera Cruz, informing him of the arrival of eighteen hips, in which was an army of eight hundred foot, and two hundred horfe, under the command of one Narvaez, who was fent by his old enemy Velafquez, the goverror of Cuba, to fuperfede him in the command, to treat him as a rebel, and fend him in chains to Cuba. The governor feized the meflengers, who were fent by Narvaez to require him to furrender, and fent them prifoners with this account to Cortes. There never was a time wherein the firmnefs and capacity of this commander in chief were put fo frongly to the proof. On one hand, here was an army in weapons and courage equal to his own, in numbers vantly fuperior, and aboveall, frengthened with the name of royal authority. The Mexicans, ill-affecied before, would rejoice in this opportunity to fall upon him. On the other hand, muft he refign the conquefts he had made with fuch infnite toils and hazards into the hands of his mortal enemy, and in return to bear the name and receive the punifhment of a traitor? There was little room to hope for an accommodation. The thoughts of a furrender were intolerable. One way only remained, to conquer Narvaez. His own to victory; and endeared to him by common dangers and triumphs; his reputation, and the fignal providence which always attended him, would combat upon his fide. Above all, no time was to be loft in fruitlefs counfels. He fent an exprefs to Sandoval, his governor in La Vera Cruz, to evacuate that place, and join him in his route with what men he had, He affembled his forces, and found them to a man attached to his interefts, and ready to hazard every thing in fupport of them. He left eighty men in Mexico, picked from his troops, recommending them to Montezuma, and him to them. With this fmall garrifon he dared to entruft Mexico and all his vaft hopes there; but the imprifoned emperor was himfelf a garrifon, from the reverence his fubjects bore him. Before he fet out, he releafed the prifoners which Sandoval had fent him, ufing the feverity of his officer to difplay his own clemency. He carefied them extremely, loaded them with profents for themfelves and the principal officers of Narvaez's army, and did every thing to create himfelf a party there by his generofity. He fent at the fame time very advantageous terms of accommodation to the general himfelf, but took care to follow and fecond his ambaffadors with all the power he could raife. This, with Sandovai's reinforcement, did not amount to
three hundred men; but with thefe, and fome confederate Indians, he marched with all imaginable diligence to Narvaez's quarters.

Narvaez, elated with the fuperiority of his army, would hearken to no terms, though he was much preffed to it by his principal officers, who difcovered plainly that this quarrel could only end in the ruin of their party, or that of the Spanifh intereft in Mexico. Mean time Cortes, little incumbered with baggage, and lefs with a dilatory genius, advanced by forced marches. He was but a fmall diftance from the enemy's quarters, when the rains came on, and, as ufual in that country, fell very heavily. Cortes, knowing that the ill difpofitions of the fky were circumftances favourable to a furprize, inviting to defperate enterprizes, and that they are always leaft prejudicial to thofe in motion, having perfect intelligence of the difpofition of Narvaez's army, and having difpofed his troops in fuch a manner as not to fall upon one another, and to act in concert, he ordered them, when they fhould enter the town where the enemy was pofted, to keep in clofe to the houfes, that they might not fuffer by the artillery, which was to placed as to play upon the middle of the Atreet. Having made this difpofition, he marched to attack the camp, on one of thore gloomy and tempeftuous nights. Though he directed every thing with the ut-

90An Account of the European moft fecrecy, Narvaez had intelligence of his approach, but he laughed at it ; and, not underfanding the nature of a prudent rafhnefs, could not believe that Cortes would make fuch an attempt in fuch a feafon, but went to lleep, withont taking fufficient care that it hould not be difturbed. Security in the general is eaflly followed by that of every one elfe. Cortes aflaulted the town in three bodies, and whilf every one in the adverfe party ran in confufion to his arms, and oppofed without command or uniformity as each man was attacked, the whole army was routed. The quarters of Narvaez were aitacked by Cortes's divifion, and the men routed there as elfewhere: Narvaez himfelf, fhamefully taken in bed, fell into his hands. "Value yourfelf, faid he, my lord Cortes, on your fortune in making me your prifoner!" But Cortes, with a fmile of indignation, anfwered, "That he thought this by far the leaft action he had performed, fince he came into the new world."

When the morning came on, the difperfed army of Narvaez began to form into bodies, and to difcover the inconfiderable force which the night before had defeated them. Their firf motion, diftracted with thame and anger, was to fall upon the conquerors, and recover the honour they had loft. But, when they found that their general was a prifoner, their artillery feized, and the advantageous poft
they had occupied in the enemy's poffeffion, and numbers amongt themfelves well affected to Cortes, they liftened at laft to his propofals, reccomended as they were by the polite and infinuating behaviour of which he was mafter, and that open and unbounded generofity he fhewed to every one. They all enlifted under his banner, and agreed to hare his fortune. Thus did this accident, which feemed to threaten inevitable deftruction to the affairs of Cortes, prove the moft effectual method of reftoring them to an excellent condition, wholly by means of the wifdom of his meafures, and of that vigour and activity with which he purfued them. His army now confifted of above a thoufand men, after replacing his garrion at La Vera Cruz, in which fortrefs he left Narvaez a prifoner.

This victory, and the reinforcement it procured, came at a moft critical time; for hardly had he begun to adjutt matters for his return to Mexico, when an exprefs arrived that his affairs there were in a moft dangerous condition. Alvarado, whom he had left to command at his departure, though a brave and able man, had too great a contempt for the Indians, and too little a difcernment for the nice circumftances he was in, to manage with that juft mixture of firmnefs and yielding, by which Cortes had hitherto fo ballanced the hopes and fears of the Mexicans, that he ne-
ver gave them an entire opportunity of knowing their own ftrength. This man, either difcovering, or pretending at leaft to difcover, that fome of the chief men in the city, who were met in the great temple, were affembled to confult how to expel the Spaniards, fuddenly furrounded the place, and murdered all the perfons of rank who compofed the affembly.

This cruel and precipitate action fired the whole people. Enraged at what they had already fuffered, and what they faw plainly they were yet to expect, their late ignominious patience, the fear of the Spanifh arms, their inbred refpect for Montezuma, were all loft in their fury. Should they ftay, until on various pretences they were all butchered? Montezuma, either forgetful of his office and dignity, or unable to exert it, could protect them no longer. Gods and men allowed them to defend themfelves, and arms were in their hands. The flame, fo furious in the capital, fpread itfelf with equal fwiftnefs and rage over all the country, and all were vowed and hearty for the deftruction of the Spaniards. In this extremity, Alvarado hewed as much bravery as he had done imprudence in bringing it on. He redoubled his watch on the emperor; he obliged him to exert the remains of his authority in his favour, and, fortifying his quarters in the beft manner the time
time would admit, he ftood out the ftorm and repulfed the Mexicans in feveral attacks. But their fury, far from relenting at the frequent and bloody repulfes they met, redoubled by their loffes. They exercifed the befieged, day and night, with the moft vigorous affaults; and to cut off their retreat, found means to burn the brigantines which Cortes had built.

Cortes, who was obliged to make fo rapid a march from Mexico, to defend himfelf againft Narvaez, was compelled by an equal neceffity to march from Zempoalla to Mexico, to relieve his forces and preferve his moft effential interefts there. The Mexicans, like all people who have not reduced the art of war to fome rule, fuffered their eagernefs in purfuing one advantage to let another material one lie neglected. For, whilft they puhed on the fiege of the Spanifh quarters with great vigour and diligence, they took no effectual care of the avenues to the city, or to cut off all fuccours from the befieged. Cortes entered the city without refiftance. He foon routed thofe who invefted the poft of the Spaniards, and brought them a relief of which they food in the greateft need.

The arrival of fo formidable a body of troops held the Mexicans fome time in fufpence ; but, in fpite of the fatal error of admitting them into their city, which had now

94 AnAccount of the European
inexcufably been a fecond time commited, and in fite of the fuccefs every where attending the Spanifh arms, they came to a refolution of continuing hoftilities. But things wore another face fince the arrival of Cortes. No longer fatisfied with defending his quarters, he faillied out and defeated them feveral times with great flaughter. However, as he found that he fuffered more by the leaft lofies than the Mexicans by the greateft, he kept clofe for fome time, fuffering the enemy to approach, in hopes of making one lant effort, to appeafe them by the authority of Montezuma. This unhappy prince, reduced to the fad neceffity of becoming the inftrument of his own difgrace, and of the flavery of his people, appeared on the battlements, and addreffed his fubjects with every argument he could ufe to prevail with them to difperfe. But this expedient was not attended with the ufual fuccers. The Mexicans, by an habit of living without rule, had many of them loft much of that refpect, which, even to adoration, every one of them ufed to pay their prince; they anfwered him with reproaches; and a.ftone from an uncertain hand ftruck him with great violence in the temple. The Spaniards carried him to his apartment. Here he refufed to fuffer any dreffings to be applied to his wound; but, wrapping his head in his garment, gave himielf up a prey to fhame and grief;
grief; and in a few days died, lefs of his wound, which was but inconfiderable, than of forrow and indignation, on feeling that he had fo far loft the efteem and love of his fubjects. There are other accounts of the death of Montezuma, but this appears the moft probable.

Thus died this noble prince, more remarkable for the great virtues by which he afcended the throne, and thofe qualities by which he held it in fo much luffer for many years, than for his fteadinefs and wifdom in defending it when attacked by a formidable enemy. It has happened thus to many great men. When Lucullus and Pompey attacked Tigranes king of Armenia, we do not fee any thing in him of the conqueror of fo many kings. Even his conqueror Pompey was not himfelf, after having enjoyed in glory for a long time a power acquired by the greateft exploits. Se e/fe magnim oblitus eft. It is natural whilf we are raifing ourfelves, and contending againf difficulties, to have our minds, as it were, frung, and our faculties intent and conftantly awake. The necenlity of our affairs obliges us to a continual exercife of whatever talents we poffefs; and we have hope to animate and urge us onward. But when we are come to the fummit of our defires, the mind fuffers itfelf to relax. It is grievous to contend a-new for things, of which we have long looked
96. An Account of the European upon ourfelves as fecure. When we have no longer any thing to hope, we have then every thing to fear. Thus enervated by this profperity, and difcompofed with this fear, we become ftiff and irrefolute to action; we are willing to ufe any temporizing meafures, rather than hazard on an adventure fo much power and reputation. If Montezuma had made an early ufe of his power, he had ftrength enough, after many loffes, to have kept Cortes far enough from his capital; but, having once entered upon fhifting and dilatory courfes, this brave and active enemy gave his affairs a mortal blow, by feizing his capital and his perfon. The reft was all a confequence, which no prudence could prevent, of a plan of conduct imprudent and ill laid originally.

## C H A P. XII.

Guatimozin chofen emperor by the Mexicans. He befieges the Spaniards in their quarters. Obliges Cortes to retire out of the city. Diftrefles bim in bis retreat. The battle of Otumba. Cortes retreats to Tlafcala.

AS foon as the Mexicans were apprized of the death of their emperor, they fet about the election of a fucceffor. They immediately caft their eyes upon Guatimozin, nephew
nephew and fon-in-law of Montezuma, a man fit to command at fuch a time; of a perfon graceful, a body ftrong and robuft, and of a foul full of the moft undaunted courage. Though no more than twenty-four years old, the reputation of his early exploits procured him the authority of age, and a penetrating genius ferved him for experience. He was no fooner called to this unfteady throne, than he took meafures to prevent the Mexicans from their diforderly and cafual attacks, and to make them act with defign and uniformity. He examined thoroughly into the caufe of their former mifcarriages; and confidering every thing, he found that the Indians in their prefent condition, could never hope for any fuccefs in open action; he refolved therefore to fpare his men as much as poffible, until his own invention and time might teach them better methods of fighting. On thefe ideas he caufed all affaults to ceafe; then he cut off the caufeways which joined the city to the continent, and at the fame time ftrongly barricaded the ftreets, refolving to ftarve an enemy which feemed unconquerable by any other means; a meafure, which though it has with us no extraordinary appearance, fhewed no fmall fagacity in Guatimozin, becaufe it was what had never been before practifed amongt the military ftratagems of this people, and invention is the characteriftic of genius.

Vol. I.

## 98 An Account of the European

From henceforward the whole method of the war was changed, the Spaniards grew every day moreand more frreightened for provifions; and whenever they fallied out, though they flew great numbers of their opponents, the many canals of the city, and barricado behind barricado, after fome fucceffful progrefs, obliged them, vanquifhed by mere wearinefs, to return without effect to their quarters. The Spaniards, invincible by the Indian arms, were not proof againft famine. Cortes faw that nothing was left for his fecurity, butas fpeedy a retreat as poffible; and though this nuft neceffarily, lofe them the moft confiderable part of the treafure they had amaffed, it was what leaft afflicted him. He encouraged his troops, by chearfully relinquifhing his own part, not to attempt burthening themfelves with a treafure which they might confider as lying at an advantageous intereft, until they fhould, as they certainly would, be enabled to return with a fufficient force to reclaim it.

The refolution of retreating being now taken, and all things difpofed for it, a queftion arofe, whether it were better made by day or in the night. On this the council of war was divided; and their reafons feeming pretty equal, a perfon among them, a fort of aftrologer, who paffed for a prophet, and as fuch was much refpected by the greater part of the army, promifed them certain fuccefs if they retreated
treated by night. Certain it is, that, when meafures are dubious, fuperfitious determinations have great ufe; for as reafon cannot eafily determine the right way, that method which fuperftition fixes upon is, by the weight it has from thence, purfued with the greater chearfulnefs and effect.

The general was guided by the prophet, and he difpofed every thing for his retreat with great judgment. He caufed the ufual fires to be lighted in every part of his quarters. Some of his boldeft and moft active men led the van. The prifoners, artillery, and heavy baggage were in the center. He himfelf, with one hundred of his choicent troops, formed the rear. With wonderful order and filence, and without any interruption, did the Spaniards march until they came to the firft breach in the caufeway. Here a portable wooden bridge, which Cortes had prepared, was laid over; but when the artillery and horfes had paffed, it was wedged fo clofely into the ftones that bordered the caufeway, that it could not be removed, and there was'yet another breach. But they were foon called from attending to this by a more preffing danger; for, as nothing could elude the vigilance of the new emperor, he found out their intention of retreating, and difpofed all along the fides of the caufeway an infinite multitude of canoes, with orders to preferve the greateft fiH 2

100 An Account of the European
lence, and not to attempt any thing until a fignal was given. The darknefs of the night favoured the fcheme. And now, perceiving that the Spaniards were under fome embarraffment, the Mexicans took this advantage, and all at once, with great order, poured in their arrows; raifing at the fame time a moft tremendous hout, fwelled with the barbarous found of all their martial inftruments of mufic. The Spaniards were not wanting to themfelves, but behaved with fignal bravery. It were needlefs, and almoft impoffible, to relate all the deftruction of that horrid night. The Indians at firft attacked in good order, but the firft ranks being repulfed, and the diftant canoes preffing on to action, the whole attack was thrown into confufion. The Indians drowned or flaughtered one another: however, they ftill preffed on with untameable fury. Thoufands, impatient of the delay their remote fituation caufed them, leapt from their canoes, and, climbing up the caufeway in the front where it was interrupted, broke in upon the Spaniards, with a torrent hardly refiftible. In vain this naked multitude was hacked to pieces by the Spanifh fwords, in vain were they tumbled upon one another by hundreds into the lake; new warriors fucceeded thofe that were killed, and the Spaniards, actually wearied out, were in danger of being wholly cut off; when, making one
vigorous effort in the front, they happily cleared that poft, and by a beam which they cafually met, they pafied over one by one; or, as fome fay, filling the intervals with the dead bodies of their enemies, they gained the main land. Cortes came over with the firt, for in the confufion of the night, their former order was in a good meafure loft, and took care as faft as his men got over to form them, in order to fecure the paffage for the reft. Then returning to thofe who were behind, by his prefence and example, he animated them to renew the fight, and drawing up a part of his men on both fides of the caufeway, he ordered the reft to file off from the center. In this manner the firft light faw the Spaniards clear out of the city. Cortes halted at a fmall diftance, that thofe whom the confufion and the night had difperfed, might have an opportunity of rejoining: the reft of the army.

Happily they were not purfued ; for as foon as the dawning light unveiled the field of battle to the Mexicans, the poffeftion of which they bought by fuch a profufion of their own blood, they perceived among the flain two fons of Montezuma. Thefe were amongit the prifoners, and were pierced by the arrows of the Mexicans in the promifcuous and undiftinguifhed carnage of the preceding night. For fome time they were con-

102 An Account of the European
founded and ftruck dumb with horror at this fight; their fentiments of loyalty returned; their monarch, almoft their god, lately profaned by their own violence! now their hands imbrued in the blood of his children! A general deadnefs and confternation enfued. They muft not add to their impiety by neglecting the obfequies due to the deceafed. In the mean time the Spaniards, favoured by this circumfance, purfued their retreat without moleftation. But this fecurity lafted a fhort time: all the allies of the Mexicans, already in arms and divided into feveral flying parties, hung over the army of Cortes, and harraffed it without intermiffion; they attacked him in front, in rear, in flank, by open force, by ambufcade, by furprize. Provifion grew extremely farce on his march; and now it was that Cortes fhewed a firmnefs under his loffes, a vigilance againft inceffant attacks fo various in time and manner, and a courage which enabled him to repulfe them, which have been exceeded by nothing in hiftory.

The principal army of the Mexicans, whilft he contended with fuch difficulties from the flying parties, took another route, and pouring in three columns into a plain, where their number might be of moft avail, they covered the whole of an extended valley, which lay directly in his road to Thucala: this was called

$$
\text { Settiements in America. } 103
$$ the valley of Otumba. They concealed their purpofes with all imaginable care. To blind the Spaniards, they ordered feveral villages to give them a friendly reception. But Cortes did not fuffer this to relax his vigilance, not allowing himfelf to be deceived by any appearances of friendihip thewn by men, whofe intereft it was not to be his friends; convinced, as he was, that a furprize of all things was indeed very prejudicial to the affairs of a general, but that it was mortal to his reputation. He drew indications of their fentiments towards him, from the manners, the geftures, and the countenances of thofe he treated with in his march; and, perceiving that many fhewed unufual figns of content and exultation, he judged, not withoutreafon, that it could not be favourable to him. He therefore difpofed every thing in fuch a manner as that his troops were neither difordered, nor his courage abated, when from an eminence they difcovered the extended plains of Otumba darkened as far as the eye could reach with the myriads of their enemies. The Spaniards, animated by their fuperiority in arms and their former victories, and the Tlafcalans, by the prefence of fuch allies and their hatred of the Mexican name, behaved with great bravery and fuccefs; neither were the Mexicans inferior in animofity and courage. But it was Cortes himfelf who determined the

## 104 Air Account of ibe European

 fortune of the day. Nothing he ever heard was either forgot, or fuffered to be an ufelefs burthen upon his memory. He remembered to have heard from the Mexicans, that the fortune of the field with them ever followed that of the royal fandard. This was a net of gold, elevated on a gilded faff, and fplendid with plumes of a thoufand colours. Great exigencies alone brought it into the field, and it was entrunted to none but the care of the general, who fat on a chair fumptuoully adorned, and fupported on men's foulders in the center of the armies, to view the whole battle, to be a witnefs of the behaviour of all his troops, and to give orders as the occafion required. Cortes, pretending to make his principal effort in a quarter remote from the itandard, employed all his foot in that fervice; but, heading the horfe himfelf with fome of his bravefe officers, informing them of his defign, and animating them with the hopes of a fpeedy decifion, he flung himfelf with fury againf the part that feemed leaf diftant from the center. Afier difpering and overturning whole battalions, they penetrated to the chofen body of nobles, who guarded the general and ffandard. Fiere the refifance was greater, but it was foon overcome, and Cortes's own lance met the general, who was overthrown, and the frandard taken. All the other ftandards were fruck directly, and the MexicansMexicans fled every way which their fear and confufion hurried them. They loft twenty thoufand men in this battle, and a fpoil infinite. This vicory gaves Cortes an undifturbed paffage to Tlafcala, and a welcome reception amongt his allies there.

## C H A P. XIII.

> Spaniards fent againft Cortes join bim. He marches again to Mexico. A confpiracy againgt his life baffled.

LET us now turn our eyes to Mexico. No fooner were the Spaniards departed, than Guatimozin ordered the city to be fortified in fuch a manner as as to fecure himfelf againft their entrance a third time. He found that a thoufand Tlafcalans were killed in this retreat, upwards of two hundred Spaniards (the greateft lofs they had yet in America), and a great number of horfes. He cut off the heads of the Spaniards, and of their horfes, no lefs dreaded, and fent them to all the neighbouring nations, as an infallible token of his victory; as a fure proof that he was refolved to keep no meafures with the enemy, and to ftir them up to their utter deftruction. He fucceeded fo well, that numberlefs petty nations, well inclined to the Spaniards, fell off, and

106 An Account of the European and many that were wavering were confirmed in the Mexican intereft. By this means feveral adventurers, that from the fame of Cortes had landed to join him, were cut to pieces before they gained his army. But the negotiation to which Guatimozin bent all his force, was that with Tlafcala, becaufe this was Cortes's chief frength. He fent large prefents, and ambaffadors of ability, with excellent inftructions, to detach them from the Spanifh intereft; who executed their commiffion fo well, that they caufed a great divifion in their favour in the councils of that republic. But Cortes, making his military exploits fubfervient to his negotiations and his fkill in negotiation affiftant to his exploits, baffled them at length with great addrefs, but not without great difficulty; and the Tlafcalans were confirmed in his friend hip.

Whilt a general has an obedient and wellunited army, he has an engine in proper order to work in his defigns, and he can then execute them with eafe; but the greateft trial of his capacity is to defend himfelf againft a foreign enemy and wreftle with a domeftic fedition at the fame time. The foldiers of Narvaez, fince Cortes's return from Mexico, where they were obliged to leave fo confiderable a part of their booty, now hopelefs of the expedition, began to mutiny, and demanded to be fent home directly to Cuba; nor were his other
troops free from fome part of the infection, Whatever could be done by preferving them in action, without too great a fatigue; whatever a feafonable yielding, without forfeiting authority; in fhort, whatever an able commander could do in fuch circumftances; was done by Cortes, without any other effect than that of palliating the difeafe; the indifpofition ftill continued.

Whilft he ftruggled with thefe difficulties, which nearly overpowered him, his old enemy, James Velafquez, looking on the fuccefs of Narvaez's expedition as a thing certain, fent a thip to get intelligence of his proceedings, and about thirty men to reinforce him. The perfon who commanded at the port for Cortes, no fooner faw the fhip in the offing than hewent on board her; and, upon the captain's enquiry after Narvaez, he affured him he was well, and as fuccefsful as he couild wifh. Not doubting this, the captain and his men landed, and were immediately made prifoners. Finding how affairs were really circumftanced, they admired the conqueror, commended the ftratagem, and chearfully joined the army.

Much about the fame time the governor of Jamaica, and he too a determined enemy of Cortes, fent three fhips with a fmall body of troops, in hopes of tearing from him fome part of his conquefts. Thefe fhips were dif-

## 108 An Account of the European

 perfed in a form, and were involved in many difficulties; but, what is fingular, they all, though feparated, came to one and the fame refolution, which was, to revolt from the commander and join Cortes the moment they came on fhore: fo that the enemies of Cortes now no lefs than three times relieved him, by the very methods which they took to diftrefs his affairs. Thefe advantages, though improved to the utmor by Curtes, were certainly not at all the refult of his contrivance. There is a fpecies of a fplendid good fortune neceffary to form an hero, to give a luftre to his wifdom and courage, and to create that confidence and fuperiority in him that nothing elfe can give, but which always makes a principal part of an heroic character. Without this, it is impofible for any man, however qualified, to emerge. Cortes was not only fortunate, by being freed from the moft terrible embarrafiment by the arrival of thefe fuccours, which were never intended as fuch; but much about the fame time fhips arrived from Spain, bringing, on the account of fome private perfons, a reinforcement of men and military fores; and from the court an authentic approbation of his conduct, and a confirmation of his command.Fortified with thefe, he yielded to the mutinous importunities of fuch of his foldiers as were earnef to depart; and, though he diminifhed
nimed his numbers confiderably by this ftep, he judged it better to have a well-difciplined army than a great one, and knew that little could be expected from men who were dragged unwillingly to action; at the fame time that their cowardice or fedition would infect the reft. After the departure of the mutineers, he found he had fill above nine hundred Spanifa foot, eighty-fix horfe, and eighteen pieces of cannon. With thefe, and with the affiftance of a vaft body of Tlafcalans, and allies of various nations, whom admiration and fear of Cortes or hatred to the Mexicans had brought under his banner, he once more prepared to attack Mexico, which was the grand object of his undertakings. The city was fo advantageoufly, fituated, and he knew at this time fo well fortified, that nothing could be done without a force on the lake. To cut off their fupplies, he ordered the materials of twelve brigantines to be got ready, in fuch a manner as only to need being put together when they fhould arrive at Mexico. Thefe were carried upon the fhoulders of his Indian allies. His route to Mexico cannot be fo much confidered in the light of a march, as a continued train of ambufcades and battles, fome of which were fought with the moft numerous armies, and with circumftances not fuited to the brevity of my purpofe to relate. In all thefe he was fuccefsful, though his enemies may be

IIo An Account of the European
faid, with little exaggeration, to have difputed with him every foot of ground between Tlafcala and Mexico.

At laft that city fhewed itfelf, rifing from the midft of a noble lake, furrounded with a number of moft populous cities, as her attendants upon every fide, and all fubject to her power. The Spaniards, looking on this as their goal, revived their courage and forgot the difficulties of their march; and the Tlafcalans, in perfect fury of military delight, wanted the fteady hand of Cortes to reftrain a courage, which he commended and kept alive by his example and words, whilf he moderated its ardor. Before he began the attack of Mexico, he fpent fome time in reducing all the neighbouring cities from which it might derive any fuccour. He cut off the aqueducts which fupplied Mexico with water, that of the lake being brackifh; and he got ready his brigantines withall imaginable diligence, to cut off aill relief from that quarter.

Whilf his attention was wholly employed in the profecution of the war, an old Spaniard, who had long ferved, difcovered to him a confpiracy of the moft dangerous nature. Antonio de Vilefana, a private foldier, but a man bold and defperate in any bad purpofe, and fubtle in contriving it, had formed a confpiracy with feveralothers to kill Cortes and the principal perfons upon whom herelied, and then to
return to Vera Cruz, from whence they might eafily pafs to Cuba, and fecure their pardon by the merit they fhould make of this action with James Velafquez. They were urged to this refolution by the fatigue of thofe innumerable dangers and difficulties they had paffed, and by the defpair of overcoming thofe which yet lay before them ; without confidering that, by this wicked action, they muft rather produce new difficulties than overcome the old. Others of more confequence were drawn in ; and the confpiracy had been fo far formed, that the time and manner of killing the general was fettled, and the perfon fixed, upon whom theyintended to devolve the command.

When Cortes was apprifed of this confpiracy, without any hurry which might give notice that he had difcovered it, yet, without lofing a moment to take advantage of the difcovery, with four or five of his principal captains, he went directly to the quarters of $\mathrm{Vi}-$ lefana, who, aftonifhed at feeing him, made half his confeffion by the fear he difcovered. Cortes had him thrown immediately into irons; and then, ordering every body to retire, he examined himfelf into all the particulars of the affair, and the names of the perfons concerned. Vilefana made a full confefion, and ended it by producing a paper in vindication of their proceeding, which had been figned

## 112 An Account of the European

with the names of all the confpirators. Cortes was not a little furprifed to fee amongft them, the names of perfons upon whom he had great reliance. However, he diffembled his concern, and ordered Vilefana to be immediatly executed. He was hhewn to all the army hanging by his tent door. Cortes informed none of the friends he moft trufted with the paper he had received; but, fummoning the army, he gave them an account of the horrid confpiracy that had been formed againft his life; that he had punifhed the perfon principally concerned; but that it was with fatisfaction he was left ignorant of his accomplices, by the care the criminal took in deftroying a paper, which he believed might have made great difcoveries. For his part, as he had punifhed, and was refolved feverely to punifh, any flagitious attempt againft his life or authority, fo he was determined to order both in fuch a manner as to give juft caufe of complaint to no man; and if by any accident he had done fo, he was ready to give him all reafonable fatisfaction. Proceeding thus, Cortes had the advantage of knowing who they were that wifhed, him ill; at the fame time that they remained unapprifed of the difcovery he had made, and endeavoured to prevent it by a more diligent performance of their duty : he now appointed a guard upon his perfon.

Hardly

Hardly had Cortes fuppreffed this confpiracy, and made the proper ufe of a baffled attempt againft his authority, which was to ftrengthen and increafe it, than a difficulty of fomething of a fimilar nature engaged him, and from which he extricated himfelf with the fame courage and prudence. The general of the Tlafcalans, envying his glory, and perhaps fearful of the confequence of the entire deftruction of the Mexicans, though enemies to his own country, perfuaded a confiderable body of the people to quit the Spanifh camp. Cortes immediately ordered him to be purfued. This general had formerly been an enemy to Cortes, and oppofed him in the council of his nation; but, when he faw the general current in his favour, he made a timely change, and came entirely into his interefts. He had now relapled, and was therefore not be trufted any more. Cortes gave orders to thofe who purfued him to put him to death. The Tlafcalans who revolted were eafily prevailed upon to return; and fo dexteroufly did Cortes reprefent this affair, that neither the Tlafcalans in his army, nor the republic, nor even the father himfelf of the general, condemned him for what he had done.
114. An Account of the European

## C H A P. XIV.

The fiese of Mexico. Terms of accommodation refufed by the Mexicans. The Spaniards repulfed by a fratagem of Guatimozin. A nero fratagem of Guatimozin. He is taken. The city furrenders. Guatimozin tortured. Cortes fuperfeded in bis government. Reflexions on the Spanifb cruelties.

THESE internal diforders being compofed, he turned his fortitude and wifdom againft his open enemies. Three principal caufeways led to the city, which three towns or fuburbs defended upon the fide of the continent. Within were trenches and barricadoes one behind another the whole length of the way. Cortes ordered three attacks upon thefe towns, and the caufeways which they defended. The brigantines acted upon the water. Through the whole length of the fiege, the bravery of the Mexicans, in defence of every thing which was dear to them, was not more remarkable than the ingenuity by which they baffled the attacks of the Spaniards, and attacked them in their turn. On land, on water, by open force, by fratagem, by every method, they plied each other inceffantly day and night. But the Spaniards, invincible under the command of Cortes, had the advantage fo far, that with infinite flaughter they gained thefe pofts which fecured the caufeways upon the fide of the country, at the fame time that they cleared the lake fo, that a canoe of the enemy did not dare to appear upon it.

Cortes gained thefe advantages, but he faw how dearly he had bought them; he reflected how it would tarnifh his glory to deftroy fo beautiful a city, and drench it in the blood of its unfortunate inhabitants; and, confidering what fupernatural exertions of ftrength had been frequently fhewn by a defpairing people, in the laft convulfive ftruggle for their religion, life, and property, he made ufe of the advantages he had gained to recommend the terms of accommodation, which he refolved to fend in to the befieged. He required no more than the acknowledgment of the emperor of the Romans, and the confirmation of his right of fucceeding ceded to him by Montezuma, and long acknowledged by the moft authentic prophecies of the nation, and. fuch a fecurity as might fettle the performance of this.

Guatimozin, who had done all that bravery and military fkill could perform to fave his country, finding the means mof fuited to his years and inclinations unfuccefsful, though full of that noble pride which becomes and lupports the royal character, was now as willing

$$
12 \text { to }
$$

116 An Account of the European
to fave it by the milder and furer way of accommodation. But the priefts, who had much influence in the council, either fearful of lofing their power, or through an honefts though blind, zeal, denounced vengeance from their gods upon all who could think of fubmiffion, and promifed a certain fuccefs to thofe who food up in defence of their religion. They had great weight; and the whole council, contrary to the opinion of the emperor, became unanimous in refufing all terms. Guatimozin, who yielded to the general fentiment with regret, and faw the unhappy confequence but too clearly, refolved to fall with the fame fpirit that he had lived. "Then, faid he, fince you are determined to hazard every thing, prepare to act in a manner worthy of that refoiution. Me, you fhall never find wanting to you, or to my felf. Thefe are the laft good terms you are to expect. Whatever henceforward you demand through necefiity, will be anfwered with pride and cruelty. Therefore, henceforward, let no man prefume to fpeak of peace, be our exigencies what they will; the firft that dares to do it fhall certainly die; even the priefts themfelves; they are moft concerned to fupport the oracles of their gods."

When he had faid this, with a ftern and determined countenance, he went out of the affembly, and cedered the whole city under arms.
arms. Cortes, on the other fide, as foon as he found that his propofals were rejected, laid afide all thoughts but thofe of violence, and commanded a general affault to be made at the three caufeways all at once, and to carry fire and fword into the heart of the city. He commanded himfelf in the principal attack. The caufeway was broke down before him, and the breach formed a ditch of fixty feet wide. On the other fide appeared a fortification of earth and planks. He ordered the brigantines to the fide of the caufeway, to favour the attack, and directing his cannon againft the fortification, made fo furious a fire that is was foon demolihhed; and the defenders, galled by the inceffant fhot, which made a moft terrible havock, could maintain the poft no longer. Cortes, under the fire of his cannon and with the help of his brigantines, paffed over the ditch, and loft no time to porfefs himfelf of the other fide, leaving one of his captains with a detachment to fill it up, and fecure a retreat, in cafe it fhould be found neceflary. Then he advanced to attack the remaining barricadoes of the Mexicans, who made a brave defence. The battle raged furioully, and as the Spaniards gained ground, their dangers and loffes grew every moment greater. They had now advanced amongft the buildings, from whence they were opprened with a mixt ftorm of darts, arrows, fones,
il8 An Account of the European and boiling water. Before them ftood a chofen body of the Mexican foldiers, who made a refolute ftand. During this conflict, the captain who had been pofted to fill up the ditch, thinking it an inglorious employment to be employed as a pioneer whilf his companions were in fuch hot action, advanced with all his men, and deferted the neceffary work he was employed in.

No fooner had Guatimozin, whofe eyes were every where, perceived this motion, thản he took advantage of it. He ordered thofe who were in the front of the Spaniards to flacken their efforts; for, as night came on faft, he thought it better to allow the enemy to gain fome ground, that he might fall on them with more advantage in their retreat. Cortes as quickly perceived this flacknefs, and the caufe which produced it. He found that the breach of the caufeway was abandoned, that night approached, and that there was little hope of a lodgment in the city at that time. He therefore began to retreat in the beft order he conid, fetting fire to the houfes, that he might not be incommoded by them in his next attack. But fcarcely was the retrear begun, when their ears were alarmed by the dreary found of the facred trumpet, fo called becaufe it was permitted to the priefts alone to found it; and that only when they animated the people on the part of their gods.

The

The found was doleful, continued, and ftrong, infpiring a contempt of death, and a dark religious fury. ' Immediately enfued a horrid cry, which refounded from all parts; and this was followed by an attack of more than common rage upon the rear of the Spaniards, which was broke entirely, after a gallant and bloody ftand. All order was now loft. The general's commands were drowned in the cry and tumult of the fight; the Tlafcalans who were in the front threw themfelves precipitately into the trench; fome made a fruitlefs oppofition, others attempted to gain the brigantines, whilft the Mexicans on thore, in canoes; wading or fwimming, upon every fide, affaulted and flaughtered them with the mof horrid cries, and a rage almof inconceivable.

With difficulty Cortes and fome of his troops efcaped on board the brigantines, wounded and defeated. A thoufand Tlafcalans lay dead upon the caufeway, many Spaniards, and farce any efcaped without a wound. What was the faddeft circumftance of all, forty were taken prifoners, of whofe deftiny there was no doubt. The other attacks had no better fuccefs, though in them the lofs was not foconfiderable. The officer, whofe imprudence had occafioned this misfortune, came to Cortes, with tears acknowledging his crime, and defring to wafh it out with his blood; but Cortes, though rigid in his difcipline, faw that this was no feverity.

Night came on; but it brought no reft to the afflicted Spaniards, fince darknefs could not conceal from them the triumph of the Mexicans and the fate of their friends. They faw the whole city fhining with lights, and heard it refounding with the diffonance of barbarous mufic and all the marks of an horrid joy. So great were the fires and illuminations, that they could fee diftinctly the men in motion, and all things preparing for the death of the prifoners, attended with the mortifying circumftance, that they were to be facrificed to their falfe gods. Cortes, in the midft of all thefe calamitous circumftances, which lay heavy about his heart, affumed an air of tranquillity, endeavouring to comfort his foldiers with the hope of a timely revenge, and taking all neceffary care that they fould not be attacked unawares. This care was neceffary; for, before morning appeared, the Mexicans, elated with their late victory and under the aufpices of thofe gods whom they believed they had rendered propitious by the human blood which wafned their altars, and animated by the found of the confecrated trumpet, fallied out to attack the Spaniards in their quarters. The attaci was violent, but repelled at length with an incredible flaughter of the Mexicans.

Guatimozin was not difheartened. He prepared for new affaults, and had his ruined works repaired, to endure thofe affaults which hould be made againft himfelf. Not relying folely on force, he fread a report amongft all the neighbouring nations that Cortes was killed; to them he fent the heads of the Spaniards, who had been facrificed, informing them, that the god of war, appeafed by a facrifice fo agreeable to him, had audibly declared in favour of the Mexicans, threatened vengeance on thofe who refifted them, and foretold that in eight days time the Spaniards fhould be all deftroyed. The credit of this oracle amongft all the Indians, and the determinate time afcertained for its completion, gave it the air of truth; for falfehood delights in general terms and equivocations, whereas the precife manner of fpeaking truth, is one of the marks by which we guefs at it. In fact, this ftratagem had its effect; many tribes of Indians, who were upon the point of joining Cortes, embraced the Mexican intereft; the more prudent fufpended their refolution; but Guatimozin did not want emiflaries even in the Spanifh camp, who terrified the Indian allies with this prophecy. Even the Tlafcalans were upon the point of deferting him, when Cortes counteracted this ftratagem in the wifeft manner poffible. He refolved to fufpend all manner of operations againft the

122 An Account of the European city for thefe eight days, to demonftrate the falfity of this oracle, and to hinder it from being ever again ufed as an inftrument to work upon the credulity of his confederates. He prevailed upon the Tlafcalans to wait the determination. In the mean time he ftrongly fortified his camp.

Guatimozin was fenfible that the effect of his policy muft be weakened every day, and with that idea employed every hour of the day or night to affault Cortes's camp, but always with ill fuccefs. This great commander was always on his guard; and his troops, advantageoully pofted, bid defiance to every thing of an Indian attack. At laft the eight days expired, and with them the terror of the confederate Indians. The ftratagem now operated as powerfully againft thofe who contrived it, infomuch that all the neighbouring nations, before fufpended by the uncertain event of thefe mighty ftruggles, declared in favour of Cortes, who by this fortunate turn in a little time found himfelf at the head of two hundred thoufand men. This was the laft hope of the Mexicans. All that followed was only the departing agony of that fate. The city was affaulted with redoubled vigour, and now, reduced by flaughters, fatigue, and famine, the Mexicans faw the fuperior ftar of Cortes gain the afcendant. The town was penetrated upon all fides, yet the befieged defended every
ftreet;

Stoet; and their inceffant fhowers of darts and ftones from the tops of the houfes, made the progrefs of the befiegers flow and bloody. In this extremity, Guatimozin did every thing that could juftify the hopes of the Mexicans when they called him to the throne, every thing that was worthy of one refolved to die a king. But when he found that all hope of diflodging the enemy was utterly at an end, his troops half famifhed, exhaufted in numbers and in ftrength, and no part tenable, he determined to leave the city to obtain the beft terms it could from the conquerors, and to feek himfelf a more profperous opportunity at a diftance. For this purpofe he renewed the treaty with the Spaniards, and took the opportunity of this ceflation of arms to put himfelf and his family, with fome of the bravent and moft faithful of his nobility, on board fome periaguas, attempting to efcape to the continent; but Cortes, apprehending this very thing, ftationed his fleet in fuch a manner, that he was intercepted, and foon out of a condition of making any defence. He went on board the Spanifh commander, with an air of dignity and compofure, betraying neither fear nor furprize, and defired no favour, but that the honour of his wife and her attendants might be fpared. The Spanifh captain attended but little to him, endeavouring to prevent the efcape of the nobility; but

Gua-

## 124 An Account of the European

Guatimozin defired him not be anxious about them. " Not one of thefe men will fly, fays he, do not fear it, they are come to die at the feet of their fovereign." The captain, admiring the conftancy of the man and the fidelity of his fubjects, conducted him to Cortes. The ruins of the city of Mexico were now delivered up to the Spaniards. With it fell that empire, and the liberty of all the Indian nations, which filled that vaft country now called New Spain, who either flid gradually from alliance to fubjection, or, defending themfelves without fuccefs, were made, and treated as flaves.

The curiofity of the reader will doubtlefs be interefted to know the fates of the captains of the conquering and conquered parties in this war. For fome time the treatment of Guatimozin was fuch as fitted an unfortunate brave man, in the hands of thofe who could eftimate virtue by other ftandards than its fortune; and fuch was his treatment, whilf the authority of Cortes was fufficient to protect him. But the infernal avarice of his troops, which at once excited and difgraced their courage, not fatisfied with the plunder of this opulent city, believed that there were fome latent treafures, within the knowledge of the emperor, which far exceeded all the reft that they had yet poffeffed. They often follicited the captive emperor with promifes and threats

## Settrements in America. 125

 to make a difcovery, but to no purpofe; at laft a number of villains, Juan de Alderete at their head, a name deferving to be remembered to its everlafting infamy, feized upon him, and proceeding to the moft abominable cruelty, laid him upon burning coals to extort a difcovery of his wealth. But their wickednefs could neither extort a difcovery of his wealth, nor the fatisfaction even of a declaration that he had none to difcover. His countenance did not betray the leaft yielding or weaknefs under the torture; fome of his principal counfellors fuffered along with him, and with equal conftancy. At laft, one of thofe unhappy men, overcome by the force of torments, almoft fuperior to human ftrength, turned his eyes, fainting with anguifh, upon his mafter, and uttered a doleful cry; but Guatimozin anfwered him only by faying, "Do you think Ilie upon rofes?" The fufferer, ftruck dumb with thefe words and ftifing every murmur that might difhearten the others or difturb Guatimozin, expired in an act of obedience to his prince. This wickednefs was committed without the knowledge of Cortes. He was no fooner apprifed of what was doing, than he ruthed in upon the villains, and refcued their prey, mangled as it was, from their further fury. However, this was but a fhort refpite. This prince, confcious of his own dignity and fenfible of126 An Account of the European
the bafe ufage he received, either endeavoured to ftir up commotions, or was fufpected of fuch a defign ; and Cortes, being obliged to fubmit the humanity of his nature to the cruel neceffity of politics, ordered him to be executed.

As for Cortes himfelf, neither his great fuccefs, nor the vaft treafures which he fent into Spain, could fecure him from his enemies ; by whofe unwearied zeal for his ruin, he faw himfelf fuperfeded in the government of a country, conquered by himelf with fo much toil and danger, and which in any other hands had never been effected. He died in Spain, having received a title and fome other rewards from Charles the Vth, for whom he had acquired an empire; but by his own defire he was carried to Mexico, and buried there. It was the policy of Spain at that time to give great encouragement, and extenfive grants, to all adventurers; but when any great difcovery was made, or conquef atchieved, they always fent another to reap the benefit of the firft adventurer's labours. This was a policy undoubtedly good with regard to one object, the fecurity of the conquered country; but, like all unjuft policy, it had altogether as ill an effect another way; the new governors, hungry and rapacious, and farce confidering the Indians as human creatares, murdered vaft numbers of them; and, exhaufting them by
an intolerable flavery, in hopes of a fudden gain, they depopulated the country in fuch a manner, as to abate very much the advantages which Spain might have derived from fo extenfive a conqueft. Cortes himfelf was not free from the imputation of cruelty ; the bifhop of Chiapa, a good man, who was fent purpofely to make an enquiry into complaints of this kind, gives a very unfavourable reprefentation of his conduct. He accufes him of having deftroyed four millions of people in New Spain. It is certain, whether by his connivance or not, but partly by the neceffity of war and partly by the avarice and infolence of the conquerors, vait numbers of the Indians perifhed: but, on the other hand, it appears that the bihop of Chiapa was an enemy to Cortes; which, though a good man otherwife, muft detract from his credit not a little, efpecially as other hiftorians differ from him in this point. Befides, 1 am well fatisfied, that great allowance muft be made for exaggerations in the number of inhabitants thefe countries are faid to have contained. More populous, I believe, they were than the entirely uncivilized parts of North or South America; but it can hardly be thought they were fo full of people as they are reprefented to have been, if we can truft to any of the rules by which we ufually judge in this matter, nor confequently could they have fuffered

## 128 An Account of the European

fered fuch loffes in fo fhort a time, without being utterly depopulated, which certainly they were not.

Since Iam on the fubject of thefe cruelties, and fince they are things fo frequently mentioned, I cannot help obferving, that the accounts are by no means founded upon any tolerable methods of calculation, but thrown down at random in a declamatory way, with a defign yet further to blacken the Spanifh adventurers; men certainly wicked enough, though reprefented without any heightening colours. The truth is, that great numbers, perhaps almoft as great as are charged, have really perihhed; but then it was in a feries of years, by being reduced to flavery in the mines, and other laborious occupations, to which the Americans are of all people by their conftitutions the moft unequal, and by being difheartened by a ftate of unpolitical and defperate flavery, the greateft enemy in the world to an increafe.

There is a notion likewife pretty common, that thefe cruelties were committed partly, if not wholly, upon a religious account, and at the inftigation of the priefts; but in reality it was quite otherwife. This unfortunate people found their only refuge in the humanity which yet remained in the clergy, and the influence they had on the Spaniards; though the clergy, who went on thefe adventures,
were generally not the moft zealous for religion, and were, as the Spanif clergy commonly are, ignorant enough, and fo little principled in the fpirit of the religion they profeffed, or indeed in the nature of the human mind, that they could boaft, as a very glorious thing, that one of them had baptized feveral thoufands of Indians in one day, without the help of any miracle for their converfion, and with a degree of good life, which, to fay the beft, was nothing more than common. But of any murders committed by them, or at their inftigation, I find little or no proof at all.

## C H A P. XV.

The fcheme of Pizarro and Almagro for the conqueft of Peru. Their characters. The flate of the empire of Peru at that time. The iaking of the ynca Atabalipa.

BESIDES Mexico, there was but one country in America which in any fort deferved the name of a civilized kingdom, and that was Peru. During the latter part of the Mexican war, the Spaniards became acquainted with the fame and wealth of this country. After Pedraria was appointed governor over the conquefts of Balboa, his lieutenants reduced all that large tract which is

Vol. I.
K
now

## 130 An Account of ithe European

now called Terra-firma, committing barbarities worthy the man under whofe authority they acted. Amongft all the adventurers who acted under his commifion, none have made themfelves fo famous as thofe of whom we are going to fpeak.

As if it were deftined that every thing in this new world fhould be carried on in a new and extraordinary manner, three citizens of Panama, private men, and advanced in years, undertook the conqueft of Peru, a country known to them only by report, but by the fame report faid to be rich, extenfive, populous, and powerful. The names of thefe adventurers were, Francis Pizarro, Almagro, and Ferdinand Lucques, a prieft, and a man of confiderable fortune. They entered into this engagement in the moft folemn manner. Lucques faid mals, an oath of mutual fidelity was plighted, the facrament was divided into three parts, Lucques took one, and delivered the other two to his confederates. The firft expedition, in confequence of this confedetacy, was made under extraordinary difficulties and with very little fuccefs. Pizarro, wh? commanded, fpent two years in the fhort navigation between Panama and the Northern extremity of Peru, a voyage now made frequently in two weeks, fince the winds and currents are known. He landed, and found that the wealth of the country was as great as he imagined; and that the refiftantce he was like to meet in endeavouring to pofiefs himfelf of it, would be full as confiderable. This he put to the proof very early, by taking the rath ftep of attacking the inhabitants at his firft landing; and thus letting them fee all at once the wortt of his intentions. The difficulties he met with, and the refiftance his ill conduct occafioned in the country, obliged him to return without effecting any thing confiderable. But neither he nor his affociates, after fuch a length of time or fuch greatnefs of expence, were deterred from the profecution of their fcheme. It was agreed that Pizarro thould go into Spain, to obtain an exemption from the government of Pedraria, and to get for themfelves the grant of whatever they fhould conquer. Pizarro (who, though not the monied man, was the foul of the enterprize) was to be chief governor, with the property of two hundred leagues along the fea-coaft. Almagro they agreed thould be adelantado, or king's lieutenant ; and Lucques, who was a prieft, was to be firft bifhop and protector of the Indians. The other profits of the enterprize were to be equally divided. But as this was an enterprize of ambitious avarice, there was little faith obferved. Pizarro follicited only his own fuit in Spain, and obtained for himfelf alone the property of the land, the go-

I 32 An Account of the European
vernment, the lieutenancy, every thing which he was capable as a layman of taking ; Almagro was forgot, and to Lucquez was left his eventual bihoprick.

On his return, this too carly difcovery of breach of faith was like to ruin all ; but Pizairro, who knew how to retreat as well as to advance, yielded up to Almagro every thing he could reafonably defire ; and nothing now obftructed the embarkation, which, after all, did not exceed one hundred and eighty men.

Before we proceed, it may not be unneceffary to fay fomething of the perfons who had the conduct of this great undertaking. Francis Pizarro was the baftard fon of a gentleman of good family. His education was as irregular as his birth, he could not even read; but then he had a great deal of that capacity and fitnefs for the world, which is obtained by much ftruggling in it, and by being early made dependent on a man's own induftry. Hardened to life, dextrous in affairs, never fetting his heart upon a part of his defigns whilf the totsl was at ftake, of a penetrating fagacity into the nature of man, artful, bold, diffembling, and cruel. Almagro had likewife enough of that defperate bravery and toughnefs of body and mind, fo neceffary in a defign of this fort. In their birth there was no confiderable difference. Pizarro was a baftard, Almagro a foundling, Pizarro owed nothing to education;
cation; Almagro depended wholly upon his natural parts, But Almagro, bred from his infancy in the camp, had all the foldierly qualities, patient, laborious, and temperate; far from the craft and diffimulation of Pi zarro, he was all opennefs and generofity, knew not what avarice was, and his cruelty, the common deftemper of all the adventurers in this part of the world, was much mitigated by the intercourfe he had writh an Indian woman, who, by degrees, foftened the rigour of a veteran feafoned to blood, into fome compaffion to her unhappy countrymen.

The empire of Peru was governed by a race of kings, which they called yncas. The twelfth in fucceffion was then upon the throne. The firft of this race, named Mango Capac, was a prince of great genius, with that mixture of enthuliafm, which fits a man to make great changes, and to be the legiflator of a forming nation. He obferved that the people of Peru were naturally fupertitious, and had principally a veneration for the fun. He therefore pretended that he was defcended from that luminary, whofe authority he was defigned to bear, and whofe workip he was by that authority to enforce. By this perfuafion, eafily received by a credulous people, he brought a large territory under his jurifdiction; a larger was fubdued by his arms; but he made ufe both of the deceit
${ }^{1} 34$ An Account of the European
and the force for the mort laudable purpofes. He united and civilized the difperfed and barbarous people; he bent them to laws and arts; he foftened them by the inftitutions of a benevolent religion; in fhort, there was no part of America in which agriculture and the arts were fo much and fo well cultivated, nor where the people were of a milder nature, and more ingenuous manners. The yncas, defcended as they imagined, from fo facred an original, were themfelves refpected as divinities. In none, even of the Afiatic countries, was there fo entire an obedience to the royal authority. But here it was rather filial than flavifh. As to the character of the Peruvians themfelves, they feem to have had a frong refemblance to the ancient Egyptians: like them, under a fky conftantly ferene, they were a people induftrious and ingenious; cultivating the arts, but without bringing them to perfection; inclined to fuperfition, and of a foft unwarlike temper.

The ynca Guaiana Capac having conquered the province of Quito, which now makes a part of Spanin Peru, to fecure himfelf in the poffeffion, married the daughter of the natural prince of the country. By her he had a fon called Atahualpa, or Atabalipa. By a former marriage he had a fon named Huefcar, heir of his other dominions. On his death Huefcar, his eldeft fon, claims his whole dominions, both hereditary and acquired. Atabalipa, the youngeft, without pretending to the ref, would keep Quito as his right by the double title of fon to the conqueror, and to her whofe inheritance that kindom was, fortified befides by the will which the dying ynca had made in his favour. This difpute kindled a civil war, which, after feveral turns of fortune, ended at laft in favour of Atabalipa; he not only ronted his brother's armies and over-run his dominions, but actually held him a prifoner in the tower of Cufco.

Such was the face of affairs when the Spaniards arrived in Peru, whofe remarkable appearance and furprizing feats of arms were every where fpread about the country, and caufed a general alarm. As ufual in frightful rumours, new fuperftitions begin, or old ones are revived, to increafe the confufion. There fubfifted a tradition amongft the Peruvians, that one of their ancient princes had a dream which he ordered carefully to be recorded. He imagined that he faw a man cloathed all over, even to his feet, with a long beard, and leading in his hand an animal, fuch as he had never feen before; and that at the fame time he was clearly informed of the will of the gods, that fuch a man fhould rule that country. A Spaniard, whom Pizarro had fent upon an embafly to Atabalipa, as foon as he K 4

I 36 An Account of the European
was difcovered leading his horfe upon fome occafion that made him difmount, agreed fo well with this dream, that it is incredible how foon it fpread into the remoteft parts of the country, and with how great a terror it fruck the whole nation.
Atabalipa, newly feated upon a precarious throne, was not the leaft alarmed at this event; for a new-erected power has every thing to fear from whatever fets the people's minds, fill unfettled, upon a new motion. He refolved, if poffible, that his enemies fhould take no advantage of the arrival of thofe ftrangers, by engaging them by all means to his own intereft. He therefore received the embaffadors, which Pizarro had fent, with the greateft marks of honour, though their difcourfe, confilting itfelf of very impertinent matter, was very ill interpreted to him, as was his to them. He even went out to meet Pizarro with a vaft number of attendants, to whom he gave the ftrictert charge upon no account to offer the leaft injury to the ftrangers, as they were thofe of whom his predeceffor had foretold, and of the fame divine original, children of the fun. But Pizarro, who advanced with other notions to the interyiew, foon convinced him that a contrary caution was more neceflary. They met near a celebrated temple, the Spaniards drawn up in order of battle, and a party in ambufcade. This

This circumftance leaves us in no doubt as to the defign of Pizarro. The firft perfon who addreffed himfelf to the ynca; was father Vincent, a friar, who was not athamed to make his character the inftrument of fo bafe a crime. He advanced with a crofs in his hand, and began a moft unfeafonable difcourfe upon the birth and miracles of Chrift, exhorting him to become a chriftian, on the pain of eternal punifhment. Then he fpoke with equal eloquence of the emperor of the Romans, preffing him with the fame ftrength of argument to become a fubject to that emperor; threatening him, in cafe of obftinacy, that God would harden his heart as he did Pharaoh's, and then punifh him with the plagues of Egypt; with other miferable ftuff, worfe interpreted. The ynca, though utterly aftonifhed at a matter fo unaccountable, behaved with decency and gravity, telling him, that he believed that he and his companions were children of the fun; recommended himfelf and his fubjects to their protection; and made no doubt but they would behave to them in a manner worthy the offspring of fo beneficent a deity.

Whilft there difcourfes continued, the Spanifh foldiers, whofe leaft bufinefs to Peru was to liften to fermons, obferving a confiderable quantity of gold in the neighbouring temple, had their zeal immediately ftirred up, and a

party

${ }_{13} 8$ An Account of the European party of them began to pillage it. The priefts made fome oppofition. A difturbance enfued, and a great noife, which fo alarmed our adventuring apoftle, that he let fall his crofs and breviary in his fright, and turned his back upon his intended profelyte. Thofe Spaniards who were not concerned in the pillage feeing him fy, either that they judged the heathens had offered their prieft fome violence, or that Pizarro made ufe of this fignal to them to fall on, immediately drew their fwords, attacked the guards and attendants of the ynca, defencelefs through a religious obedience to their fovereign's command, and with every circumfance of the moft deliberate and fhocking barbarity ilaughtered five thoufand, which was near the whole number of the Indians, who fell without any anxiety for their own lives, preffing forward with all the zeal and officioufnefs of a moft heroic loyalty to the chair of their prince, to expire at his feet; and as faft as one fet of his fupporters were flain, the others fucceeded with eagernefs to fupply their places, and fhare their fate. The ynca at laft was dragged down, and made a prifoner, by an act of the moft unparalleled treachery, executed with a cruelty that has hardly an example and can admit of no excufe. The plunder of his camp, rich beyond the idea of any European of that time, was their reward.

The unfortunate prince was not wanting to himfelf in his captivity. Seeing that his liberty had fallen a facrifice to their avarice, he hoped to relieve himfelf by working upon the fame difpofition. He began to treat of his ranfom, and promifed fuch fums as aftonithed the Spaniards into an agreement; nor was the performance unequal. On this occafion, not only the ancient ornaments and valuable furniture, amaffed by a long line of magnificent kings, were brought out; but the hallowed treafures of the moft venerated temples were given without fcruple, to fave him who was the fupport of the kingdom and the religion. Whilft thefe were preparing, three Spaniards, who were fent to Cufco to fuperintend in the work, had means of conferring with Huefcar, who, quickly finding their foible and the ufe his brother had made of it, complained bitterly of the injuries he had fuffered; begging the Spaniards, as the patrons of the oppreffed, to embrace his caufe, promifing threefold the treafure for their affintance, which Atabalipa was to pay for his ranfom. He received a very favourable anfwer. Mean time the Spaniards treated the ynca with all manner of civility, admitted his attendants to him, but no talk of his liberty. As foon as he had been apprifed of Huefcar's negotiation with the Spaniards and Almagro's arrival with an additional force, he began to

140 An Account of the European
be under great apprehenfions. To eafe himfelf upon one fide, he fent immediate orders to have Huefear put to death.

The arrival of Almagro, on the other hand, caufed fome embarraffiment in Pizarro's affairs. This commander, finding that $\mathrm{Pi}-$ zarro had feized the ynca with immenfe treafures, and having already experienced his ill faith, confulted with his principal officers about leaving Pizarro's part to himfelf and feeking their fortune elfewhere. Whilft this was in agitation, his fecretary, moved by fome refentment to his mafter, gave Pizarro notice of the defign. In an inftant Pi zarro faw how difadvantageous fuch a ftep muft prove to him, with fo fmall a force, all refources at a diftance, and the country exafperated by the deteftable action he had lately committed. He faw that all depended upon removing every fufpicion from the breaft of Almagro. For this purpofe, and as fomething of an ill mind appeared in his moft mafterly actions, he began by facrificing the fecretary. He informed Almagro of his treachery. Next, though gold was the great object of his undertakings, yet he knew how to relinquinh fome part to fecure the reft. He agreed to divide the fpoil equally between Almagro and himfelf, and to make no diftinction between the foldiers of either in the diftribution. This made an entire
entire and hearty reconciliation; which was no fooner concluded than the ynca's ranfom came in.

But this vaft treafure, the capital object of all their labours and villainies, no fooner came into their poffeffion, but in its confequences it was very near being the utter ruin of their affairs. It is faid, and not improbably, that the whole exceeded the fum of one million five hundred thoufand pounds fterling, a fum valt at the prefent time; then it was a prodigy. On the dividend, after deducting a fifth for the emperor, and the fhares of the chief commanders and officers, each private foldier had above two thoufand pounds Englifh money. They had now made a fortune even beyond their imaginations; but the foldiery was ruined, the greateft part of the army infifted upon being difcharged, that they might enjoy their fortunes in quiet. This propofal ill fuited with the ambitious views of the commanders. Almagro was for proceeding in the ufual way, to enforce obedience by the feverity of military difcipline; but Pizarro oppofed him. "Let them go, fays he, they cannot do us better fervice; here we fhall have them mutinous and cowardly foldiers, at home they will act for us as recruiting officers with great fuccefs; for when it fhall be feen that common foldiers, of folittle merit as they, have made fuch large fortunes, we fhall not

142 Account of the European
long want better men to fupply their places." The defire of the foldiers was complied with, and as many as chofe to go, who were no inconfiderable number, departed. In due time, the fagacious prophecy of Pizarro was accomplifhed, and their army never wanted reinforcements.

## C H A P. XVI.

The murder of the ynca. A difpute between Pizarroand Almagro. They were reconciled. Almagro's expedition to Cbili. The Peruvians renew the war, and befiege Cufco. Almagro returns and defeats them. Almagro renews the quarrel with Pizarro, but is defeated and put to death.

I$N$ the mean time the unfortunate Atabalipa, the greatnefs of whofe ranfom only convinced the Spaniards of the neceffity of never releafing him, endeavoured to take advantage of his captivity, to know the genius and manners of this people. Amongft all their accomplifhments, there was nothing he fo much admired as the art of reading and writing. This appeared almoft incomprehenfible to him, though he faw clearly the ufe of it. He was at a lofs to know whether he fhould confider it as a natural endowment, or as an ac-quifition of art. To difcover this, he one day
defired.
defired a foldier to write the name of God upon his nail: he carried this about the army, defiring feveral to explain it, which they all did, to his wonder and fatisfaction. At laft he fhewed it to Pizarro, but Pizarro bluhned, and could make nothing of it. The ynca then perceived it was no natural gift, but owing to education; the want of which he thus difcovered in Pizarro, and flighted him for it. This mortified the general, and his difguf, joined to his natural cruelty and a policy he thought he faw in the proceeding, made him haften the fate he had fome time before determined for his unhappy prifoner. That nothing might be wanting to the boldnefs and atrocioufnefs of their barbarity, they proceeded againft him by way of trial and by the forms of law.

A charge was exhibited, digefted under feveral heads. ift, For being an idolater. 2dly, For having many concubines. 3 dly, For wafting the treafures of the kingdom, and raifing taxes fince the coming in of the Spaniards. And laftly, For the murder of his brother Huefcar. An attorney-general was appointed to manage the accufation, and an advocate appointed from amongft themfelves afligned for his defence. In vain did the more numerous and better part of the army proteft againft this proceeding, and lodge an appeal to Spain; in vain did they alledge their want of power

144 An Account of the European
to judge a foreign prince for any crimes, and the abfurdity of the crimes with which this prince was charged. Before fuch judges; and with fuch an advocate to defend him, the ynca was condemned to be burned alive. To compleat this violation and mockery of all laws, human and divine, the fame father Vincent, who had fo fignalized himfelf upon a former occafion, was fent to comfort and inftruct him in his laft moments. The chief argument which he ufed to convert him to chriftianity was, that, on his embracing the faith, inftead of being burned, his fentence fhould be mitigated to ftrangling. This prince fubmitted to baptifm, and was immediately ftrangled in prifon. Pizarro gave the final ftroke to his hardened and fhamelefs villainy, by giving him a magnificent funeral, and going into mourning.

The death of the ynca was no fooner fpread. abroad, than the principal nobility at Cufco fet up the brother of Huefcar ; Pizarro fet up a fon of Atabalipa; and two generals of the Peruvians fet up for themfelves. Thus was this wretched country torn to pieces at once by foreigners and by a domeftic war amongft themfelves. Yet fuch is the preference of any fort of fpirit roufed within a nation, to a lethargic inactivity, that the $\mathrm{Pe}-$ ruvians gained fome confiderable advantages over the Spaniards, even in this diftracted condition, dition, and took feveral prifoners, amongft which was the attorney-general, whom they put to the death he deferved without any great formality. The reft of the prifoners, as foon as they were informed of their having protefted againft the emperor's death, they generoufly releafed. Thefe advantages gained by the Peruvians made the Spaniards liften to a treaty; for Pizarro was equally ready at all times to make a peace, or to break it, as his affairs required. He made ufe of this interval to fettle the Spaniards in the country. It was now that he laid the foundations of the famous city of Lima. But as foon as he judged himfelf in a condition to profecute it, he renewed the war with the Indians, and, after many difficulties, made himfelf mafter of Cufco, then the capital of the empire.

But, whilft he was thus by force and fraud eftablifhing himfelf every where, the whole fabric of his defigns was fhaken by a frefh difpute between him and his collegue Almagro. Thefe commanders had little mutual affection, and lefs confidence in each other's honour and integrity; for fimilarity of manners is no ground of friendfhip, but where the manners are good in themfelves. Their common neceffities, it is true, obliged them for a time to keep a fair appearance; but each, fatisfied of the other's ill interstions, watched an opportunity of being before-hand in fome finifter

Vol. I.
L.

2dvan-

146 An Account of ibe European advantage. New grants and fupplies had lately arrived from Spain. Pizarro obtained two hundred leagues along the fea-coaft, to the Southward of his former government. Almagro had a grant of two huadred more to the Southward of Pizarro's. Judging, or pretending he judged, that the wealthy and important city of Cufco was not included within Pizarro's grant, he immediately ceafed to act in fubordination to him, and claimed this city as his property. Pizarro's brother, who commanded for him, abfolutely refured to deliver up the place. Almagro infifted on it with equal obtinacy; and they were on the point of deciding the difpute by the fword, when Pizarto, the moment he had notice of the quarrel, fer out from Lima, where he was at that time indifpofed, and, notwithftanding his infirmity, with incredible expedition arrived at Cufco, He told his collegue, that he was not unable nor afraid to fupport the juftice of his claim by arms; but he chofe rather to convince him by reaton; that the ties which fubifted between them, and their common neceffities, would always touch him with concern when he hould be compelled to violent courfes; which, however they might end with regard to the competiors, would certainly be much more in favour of the common enemy. He demonftrated to him that Cufco was indubitably within his (Pizarro's) government
ment, and ended in affuring him, that, as he would defend his own right with all his force, fo he was equally willing to employ all that force, with all his treafure, and all his counfel, and whatever affiftance he could give, to put Almagro into poffeffion of whatever was really his right ; that this lay yet more to the Southward than Cufco, and was a country no way inferior in its riches, and the eafinefs of its conqueft.

This timely appearance of Pizarro, his dexterous management, and judicious mixture of firmners and flexibility, made fuch an impreffion upon Almagro, that he was once more reconciled; and, adding as many of Pizarro's troops to his own as he judged neceffary, he penetrated with great danger and difficulty into Chili, lofing many of his men whilft he pafied over mountains of an immenfe height, and always covered with fnow. He fucceeded notwithftanding in a good meafure in his defigns, for he reduced a valuable and confiderable part of that country.

There was undcubtedly in the four hundred leagues which Pizarro had folicited for himfelf, enough of land to fupply any reafonable ambition, and fomething to fpare, to fecure the quiet poffeftion of the reft; but his eagernefs after a large territory made him blind to the folly of dividing his troops, and fending Almagro upon a wild diftant expedition; and

148 A ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN
yet he confidered this as a mafter-piece of policy. A little time, however, convinced him to the contrary. No fooner did the ynca perceive this divifion of the Spanifh troops, than he defired leave from Pizarro's brother, who managed affairs for him at Cufco, to affit at a folemn feftival of his nation, which was to be held at fome diftance. This feaft was in reality a fort of an affembly of the fates of the kingdom. The ynca, having obtained permifion to affift at it, made ufe of this opportunity to reprefent to his fubjects, in the mof pathetic manner, the mifery, to which the nation was reduced; the fettlement of the Spaniards, the cities they had built, the garrifon they kept at Cufco, and the guard they had on his own perfon. That, for theirfakes, he was now refolved to hazard that perfon and every thing that was dear to him ; that now was the time to make an effort with fuccers, when their enemies, divided amongft themfelves, had feparated in fearch of other kingdoms, to fatisfy an ambition that nothing could fatiate. The whole affembly united in thefe fentiments; they roufed the country every where, and the Spaniards who remained in Peru were not able to prevent the ynca from laying fiege to Cufco, with an army of two hundred thoufand men. Though the garrifon under Ferdinand Pizarro confifted of no more than feventy men, yet, with their artillery,

## Settiements in America. 149

lery, the fallies made with their horfe, and aflifted by the ignorance of the Peruvians in carrying on a fiege, their defence was as fuccersful as it was brave.

News was brought to Almagro of the dangers to which Cufco was expofed, and the univerfal infurrection of the Peruvians. Relinquibing his new conquefts, be hartened back to preferve his old with great expedition; tho: on his return he fuffered as much from drought and heat, as in his progrefs he had endured from cold. At his approach the Indians raifed the fiege, and he was joyfully received into Cufco by Ferdinand Pizarro, and the garrifon, almoft exhaufted by the length of the defence.

After all there long and laborious marches, Almagro was extremely fatigued, and thought it hard, that now in the wane of his life he fhould be driven with infinite toll upon new conquefts, while Pizarro fat down at eafe to enjoy alone the fruits of their common labours. He refolved to renew his claim to Cufco; he had now a fort of right to it by having raifed the fiege, and he had a frength fufficient to fupport that right. Ferdinand and Gonzalo, the two brothers of Pizarro, making fomeoppofition, were thrown intu prifon, and their little army either joined him, or flared the fame fate.

Pizarro,

Pizarro, unacquainted with the arrival of Almagro or the ftep he had taken, had got together an army for the relief of Cufco, who were near the town before they found they had an enemy of any other fort than the Indians to contend with. Almagro, after having tried in vain to feduce their fidelity, engaged and routed them. On this advantage, his friends reprefented to him, that now was the happy hour of his fortune, and that he ought to employ it to eftablifh himfelf beyond all poffibility of being removed. That he ought to put the Pizarros, his prifoners, to death, and march directly to Lima, to feize upon his rival, who never could be heartily reconciled to him, and whilft he remained in poffeflion of the fea-coaft, could never want means of making his enmity terrible. Almagro had humanity enough to reject the firft part of this counfel, and weaknefs enough not to hearken to the laf. If he marched into another's government, he trembled at the name of a rebel; and, for fear of the name, expofed himfelf to fuffer the punifhment of the thing; not confidering that, having once embrued his hands in civil blood, he ought never to fop till his end was gained; that conqueft alone could decide the queftion of their right; and that he who had the greater force would have the beft means of protection, if he was in the wrong. Whilf he deliberated what courfe
to take, Gonzalo Pizarromade his efcape with an hundred of thofe who were affected to his caufe.

It was the intereft of Pizarro, who found himelf in no immediate condition to carry on the war, yet pofieffed all the means of being reinforced, to keep matters from coming to an extremity; it was Almagro's to bring them to a fpeedy infue; and, in this knowledge of the management of time, when to lie by to gain it and when to ufe the prefent moment, the great fkill in bufinefs, fo little underfood, depends almoft entirely. Pizarro had recourle to the old way of treaty; he promifed largely, he offered a fea-port, and agreed to fubmit the decifion of all their difputes to the royal audience; but, as a preliminary, he infifted on the releafe of his brother Ferdinand. Experienced as Almagro was in Pizarro's faith, he gave up the only pledge that could fecure it. The moment Ferdinand was releafed, he was put at the head of the reinforcements Pizarro had long expected, and now received; and, as he was a man of capacity, he prepared to act with vigour. The treaty was forgot.

The country which held for Almagro was feparated from that which Pizarro poffefed, by vaft mountains paffable only in fome fteep and dangerous defiles. Almagro's counfellors advifed him by all means to poft his troops in

152 An Account of the European
fuch a manner as to oppofe his enemies in thofe pafits; but fo infatuated was he with a falfe fecurity; that he refufed to fend any troops to occupy thofe important pofts, which were feized by the enemy without the leaft oppofition. He had, however, one refource left, and that a good one. The town of Cufco was well fortified, had a good garrifon, and the enemy was ill provided for carrying on the fiege. But, as he had prejudiced his affairs before by dilatory meafures, he now compleatly ruined them by precipitation and temerity. Fie turned his back upon the advantages of his fituation, and refolved, contrary to the opision of all his officers, to hazard bis.fortune in the field; confident of his own fuperiority, and full of contempt of the enemy, whom he believed to be raw troops. But he found too late, that they were veterans of great bravery, and exact difcipline. The engagement was warm ; in which Almagro and his troops behaved in fuch a manner as not to difgrace their former exploits; but, after a gallant ftruggle, they were in the end entirely defeated. Almagro himfelf was taken prifoner, and fell, at the age of feventy-three years, a vicim to a rafhnefs fcarce excufeable in a young foldier; but to the laft degree blameable in an experienced commander, who, being fuppofed to have long eftablifhed his reputation for courage beyond all doubt, ought to model his conduct only by his own experience, and the circumftances of the affair in which he is engaged.

Pizarro, having got the rival who had caufed him fo many apprehenfions into his hands, refolved to fhew him no mercy. In fite of Almagro's age, which, as it might remove his fears, ought to have given room for pity; in fpite of their common warfare, their dangers and triumphs; in fpite of every fentiment of gratitude for what this unfortunate man had contributed to his greatnefs, and in fpite of his late mercy to his brother; all which were pathetically and ftrongly urged by Almagro, to fuffer an old man, and a prifoner too, after fo many fruitlefs toils, to die quietly in his bed; Pizarro was deaf to every thing but a barbarous policy, which made him fubmit every virtue to fecuring the meaneft part of his defigns. Almagro was formally tried, fentenced, and then itrangled in prifon. His body was afterwards beheaded publickly on a fcaffold, and for a long time denied burial. A negro flave interred it by fealth. Amidft the pity which this barbarous execution caufed, people could not forbear recollecting the, unhappy fate of Atahualpa, and the fhare which Almagro had in it.

154 An Account of ble European

## CHAP. XVII.

The final dipertion of the Peruvian army. The confpiracy agaif Pizarro. He is murdered.

wHILST this civil war raged, the ynca took a very extraordinary refolution. He difbanded his troops and retired to the mountains; "Becaufe, fays he, whilf we are in arms, their fear of us will be a means of uniting the Spaniards; but, if we difperfe, they will certainly deftroy each other." A refolution this, which at firt view has fomething matterly, but it is only when viewed in one light. When their natural prince is fled, the people who mult be governed may give the reins of government into the hands of the enemy. An army once difperfed is got together again with great difficulty; and, on the other hand, a civil war is by no means a certain deftruction to thofe who are engaged in it: and indeed, by the reafon of the thing and by the event, it was an ill-judged feep, the fcheme of a barbarous prince, who was far from being a confummate politician.

It was very ruinous to the Peruvians, that, happening to be divided amongft themfelves when the Spaniards came in, they fuffered them to interfere in their parties; but it was of yet worfe confequence that, when the Spaniards
were afterwatds divided, they interfered themfelves in the Spanifs parties. Almagro and Pizarro had armies of Indians, by which thofe people were habituated to obey them, and to be intercfted in their fuccefs; this, joined to the want of any regular plan of defence on the part of their king and commanders, fubdued that empire to Pizarro with fmall trouble, if we conider the greatneis of the object. But having atchieved fo great a conqueft, it only made Pizarro acquainted with othergreat tracts which were rich, and might be added to them. He followed the tracks of Almagro into Chili, and reduced a confiderable part of the country. Orellana, one of his commanders, paffed the Andes, and failed down to the mouth of the river of Amazons; an immenfe navigation, which difcovered a rich and delightful country; but, as it is moftly flat, and therefore not abounding in minerals, the Spaniards then, and ever fince, neglected it.

The death of Almagro, and the influence it had upon the conduct of Pizarro, is a ftriking example how neceffary it is for a great man to have an awe upon him from fome oppofition, that may keep his prudence alive, and teach him to have a watch upon his paffions. Not content with a territory upwards of eight hundred leagues long, and of a prodigious breadth, riches fuch as none of the kings of his country had ever poffeffed, a jurifdicton little lefs than
royal,
$15^{6}$ An Account of the European royal, and an abfolute fecurity for the extinction of the only perfon who had any pretenfrons againft him, either through a jealoury which often haunts the happieft fortune, or through a pride which cannot bear even the appearance of any who had once withftood his power, he took a refolution entirely to cut off all that had ever adhered to his rival; he did not know when the iffue of blood ought to be ftopped; nor that examples of feverity on a few create terror and fubmiffion, but that threats of general deftruction produce nothing but defpair and defperate refolutions. He was not fatisfied with putting many to death, but iffued a proclamation, inhibiting, under the fame penalty, that any perfon fhould harbour, or even relieve an Almagrian with the neceffaries of life. This party was yet numerous, though difperfed and lurking about the country. The heads of them, finding Pizarro implacable, entered into a confpiracy to murder him. They did not want adherents in the city, fo that they found means of concealing themfelves until their plot fhould be ripe for execution; but by fome means Pizarro difcovered their defigns, and fuffered them to know he had difcovered them. Alarmed at this information, they faw nothing could happen but death atany fide. Twelve of the chiefs marched into the ftreets at noon-day, with their fwords drawn, crying out, "Long live the king!
king! but let the traitor die;" and, croffing the great fquare of Lima, made directly to $\mathrm{Pi}-$ zarro's palace; the reft followed in different parties. The people all the while fufpended, and in that inactive amazement which the execution of a bold and fudden enterprize generally infpires, made no oppofition. The confpirators fecured the avenues; and Pizarro, not alarmed until he was furrounded by his enemies, fell under their fwords after having fold his life dearly.

Thus died Pizarro, by an event extremely memorable. A great conqueror, in the city he had himfelf built, in his own palace, amidft his guards, murdered at noon-day by the hands of a fmall number of fugitives. The $\mathrm{Pe}-$ ruvians had the fatisfaction to fee the fecond of their conquerors cut off by the fame fword that had afficted themfelves.

## C H A P. XVIII.

Young Almagromade governor. The new viceroy Vaca di Caftro arrives. Puts to death young Almagro. Puts an end to the factions, and Settles the province. He is recalled. Gownzalo Pizarro raifes a rebellion, and ufurps the government. Peter de la Gafca made viceroy. Defeats the troops of Pizarro, and puts bim to death.

WHEN Pizarro had fallen in conequince of those cruel and ill-judged fteps which he took for his fecurity, the AImagrians, elate with their fuccefs, and growing into a formidable body, feized upon the city, and proclaimed the natural for of old Almagro governor; a youth not twenty years of age, but of a courage and capacity notabfolutely unequal to a charge of fuch imporstance, undertaken in circumftances fo critical. But though the Almagrians fucceeded beyond their hopes, by the coafternation caused by the fuddennefs of the attempt, and the general diflike to the cruel procedure of Pizarro; the major part of the Spaniards were far from acquiefcing in this irregular nomination of a governor. A confiderable number, and thole of the bet men, declared, that, without interfting themfelves in the quarrel of either party, they
they would wait for the emperor's determination, which they expected hourly, and so which alone they were refolved to conforn themfelves.

In this tate of things the new governor Vaca di Caftro arrived. This man was of a good family, and by profeffion a lawyer; but, through a more rigid adherence to the fricket idea of right and juftice than is fuitable to the coarfenefs of practice, he did not make that figure in his profeffion to which his great capacity entitled him. But what kept him backward at the bar, recommended him firft to the knowledge, and afterwards to the efteem, of his mafter the emperor Charles the Vth, who was a man of too much difcernment not to be ftruck with a character fo fingular as was that of one who was a lawyer without exercinng the trade of law, and lived at court without being a courtier. Therefore, without any folicitation of his own, without any recommendation from a minifter or favourite, this man's plain unoftentatious virtue placed him in an employment of fo great a truft. When he arrived in the Indies, he fill preferved his character. He acted like one who cameneither to acquire friends nor fortune, but folely to do his duty; and he fhewed favour or dilapprobation to all in proportion as they performed their's. Indian or Spaniard was entirely alike to the equality of his juftice. He flattered

160 An Account of the European
flattered nobody, he threatened nobody; and, whilf he lived with all the modefty of a private man, he fupported all the dignity of a governor.

He was hardly landed, when young Almagro fent him an embaff, explaining the reafons of his conduct, and propoling terms; but Caftro anfwered him, that he was come under the emperor's authority, folely to do him and every body juftice, of which, if a good fubject, he could have no room to complain; if a bad one, he muft prepare to feel it: he knew no other terms. This was new language to governors in this part of the world, who almoft forgot they had a fuperior. Almagro therefore was refolved to abide the fortune of war, rather than fubmit without fuch terms as might enfure him the government of his father's province at leaft. On the other hand, Caftro would hear of no terms between a king and his fubjects, and therefore fet himfelf at the head of his troops, which were compofed of thofe who had refufed to obey Almagro, and gave him battle. The victory was on his fide, but not without a bloody difpute.

Several of Almagro's officers, in hopes of procuring favour for themfelves, betrayed his caufe in the battle; but Caftro was far from thinking their treachery to their leader could be reckoned a fervice to the crown, and there-
fore fpared none of them in the numerous executions he found it neceffary to make on this occafion. None of the fufferers was more pitied than Almagro, who behaved with the utmoft gallantry in the engagement, as' he had done with much humanity and honour upon moft occafions. He was taken and beheaded.

The feverity of this procedure, whilft it terrified every body, drew no odium upon the governor, who acted clearly without prejudice or felf-intereft. They looked on thefe executions like judgments from heaven, which afflict us bitterly, but leave no room for murmur or complaint againft the hand that inflicts them. To the followers of Pizarro, who valued themfelves on their late fervice, and murmured that they were not rewarded better than he thought they deferved, he fhewed little favour. He toid them he could well diftinguifh between what was done out of a fpirit of party, and what proceeded from a principle of loyalty to their fovereign; that they might look upon themfelves as very happy that he fuffered their lat action to obliterate the memory of all their others. In fhort, he proceeded with fuch conftancy, that the Spaniards vrere reduced to an entire fubjection, and the Indians treated by them as fellow-fubjects and fellow-creatures. The clergy he made to attend diligently to the duty of their function,

Voz. I.
M
and
i52 An Account of the European and to the converfion of the Indians, rather than to the acquifition of their gold. He modelled the adminiftration of juftice in the exacteft manner. He founded feveral towns, and eftablifhed fchools and colleges in them, and placed the royal revenues on fuch a footing, that the conqueft of Peru became immediately a great public advantage, which formerly was little more than an object of private plunder. But, whilft he remained himfelf poor among fome of the richeft confifcations that ever were made, and whilf he enriched the royal treafury with moft prodigious remittances, the great men at court received no prefents. This induced them to get a number of judges appointed, whofe authority over-ruled that of Caftro. The end was anfwered. Difputes arofe; the colony was unfettled; appeals and complaints innumerable came home, and prefents from all fides. But what anfwered the prefent end of the courtiers, was near ftopping up the fpring of bribery for the future. In the confufion that arofe, from fuch clafhing jurifdictions and the fchemes of men intent upon their own interefts, it was not hard for Gonzalo, the brother of the famous Pizarro, to avail himfelf of the general difcontent, and to fet himfelf at the head of a party.

It was now no longer a difpute between governors about the bounds of their. jurifdictions; Gonzalo Pizarro only paid a nominal fubmif-

$$
\text { Settlements in America. } 163
$$ fion to the emperor. He ftrengthened daily, and even went fo far as to behead a viceroy who was fent to curb him. There was a fleet at this time in the South-Seas, and he had addrefsenough to gain the admiral to his interefts; by which means he was able to over-awe the coaft of Mexico, and prevent any force coming againft him from that part. He even entertained hopes of gaining the Spaniards in that kingdom to join in his revolt.

The court, jufly alarmed at this progres, having felt the ill effect of fending men who were recommended to their pofts by importunity and cabal, as they had experienced the beneficial confequences of employing perfons whole character only pleaded for them, fent a licentiate in divinity, called Peter de la Gafca, a man differing only from Caftro, by being of a milder and more infinuating behaviour ; but with the fame love of juftice, the fame greatnefs of foul, and the fame difinterefted fpirit. This mildnefs of character fuited the circumftances of the times, as well as the rigid juitice of Caftro did thofe in which he was appointed; for, as the revolt was now almoft general, he could find no friends but fuch as he could make; becaufe, though he was invefted with the ampleft authority from Spain, he neither carried men to enforce it, nor money; and the whole fuccefs of the expedition refted folely in his own capacity.

164 An Account of the European When he arrived in Mexico, he declared that his was a peaceable profeffion; that he came not to exercife feverities, but to heal by gentle meafures the effects of thofe which were formerly exercifed. He even wrote a very obliging letter to Pizarro, perfuading him to fubmit, and offering him a free pardon for himfelf and his aflociates. In the mean time, he was not wanting in more vigorous meafures; but, by his engaging addrefs and the reputation of his probity, raifed large fums of money, and fome hundreds of men. Pizarro, puffed up by his fuccefs, received the embaffador with great haughtinefs, and fent his anfwer, which was likewife that of his affociates, by the admiral; it was, in effect, that neither would he yield up his government, nor would they fubmit to have any other governor. The admiral had inftruetions to try what bribery would do, and, if that failed, to fire the city of Panama, and bring off the new viceroy prifoner. However, during their conferences, the affair took abfolutely another turn, and the admiral, inftead of conveying Gafca a prifoner to Peru, tranfported him thither with all his forces, returning to his allegiance himfelf, and perfuading all his adherents to be hearty in the royal caufe. The viceroy did not at all alter the profeffions and behavicur he had ufed in Mexico; but, every where proclaiming peace and pardon 2t the head of a powerful force, he drew the cis
ties of Lima and Cufco from the party of $\mathrm{Pi}-$ zarro; who, finding himfelf obliged to evacuate the moft confiderable places of ftrength, with very unequal forces hazarded a battle, in which he was made prifoner. He was foon after condemned and executed, with thofe who had been the chief inftruments of his rebellion.

Such an ill far governed all thofe who had a thare in the reduction of Peru! Almagro beheaded; his fon tharing the fame fate; Pizarro murdered in his own palace; his brother Ferdinand kept a prifoner twenty-three years; and his other brother Gonzalo, as we have juf feen, fuffering death as a traitor. The new governor, having by neceffary feverities quieted his province, took effectual care to heal its diforders by the arts of peace, and to compleat what Caftro had been obliged to leave unfinihed. He fettled the civil government, the army, and the mines, upon fuch a bafis as made the province worthy to be plundered by future viceroys. He carried over two millions to the royal treafury, paid all his debts, and fate down as poor in Spain as he had left it.

The reduction of the great empires of Peru and Mexico makes almoft the only thing very much worth infiting upon in the American hiftory. A few fkimihes with a favage people, and fome voyages and difcoveries exactly, pefembling each other, changing only the names

166 An Account of the European and fituations, is the matter, which, in my opinion, unprofitably fills fo many volumes, and contains very little of either curiofity or inftruction. However, when I come to treat of the feveral European fettlements particularly, I hall not omit to mention any thing in their hiftory that contains either the one or the other.

End of the First Part.


## $\mathrm{P} A \mathrm{R}$ T II.

## The Manners of the Americans.



## C H A P. I.

The perfons of the Americans. Their drefs and way of living. Their monner of converfing. Their bospitality. Their temper. Their religion and Juperflitions. Their medicine.

THE Aborigines of America, throughout the whole extent of the two vaft continents which they inhabit, and amongft the infinite number of nations and tribes into which they are divided, differ very little from each other in their manners and cuftoms; and they all form a very friking picture of the moft diftant antiquity. Whoever confiders the Americans of this day, not only fudies the manners of a remote prefent nation, but he fudies, in fome meafure, the antiquities

168 An Account of the European
of all nations; from which no mean lights may be thrown upon many parts of the ancient authors, both facred and profane. The learned Lafitau has laboured this point with great fuccefs, in a work which deferves to be read amongft us much more than I find it is.

The people of America are tall, and ftrait in their limbs beyond the proportion of moft nations: their bodies are ftrong; but of a fpecies of ftrength rather fitted to endure much hardfhip, than to continue long at any fervile work, by which they are quickly confumed; it is the frength of a beaft of prey, rather than that of a beaft of burthen. Their bodies and heads are flatiin, the effect of art; their features are regular, but their countenances fierce; their hair long, black, lank, and as ftrong as that of a horfe. No beards. The colour of their fkin a reddih brown, admired amongf them, and improved by the conftant we of bear's fat and paint.

When the Europeans firft came into America, they found the people quite naked, except thofe parts, which it is common for the moft uncultivated people to conceal. Since that time they have generally a coarfe blanket to cover them, which they buy from us. The whole faihion of their lives is of a piece; hardy, poor, and fqualid; and their education from their infancy is folely directed to fit their bodies
bodies for this mode of life, and to form their minds to inflict and to endure the greateft evils. Their only occupations are hunting and war. Agriculture is left to the women. Merchandize they contemn. When their hunting feafon is paft; which they go through with much patience, and in which they exert great ingenuity, they pafs the reft of their time in an entire indolence. They fleep half the day in their huts, they loiter and jeft among their friends, and they obferve no bounds or decency in their eating and drinking. Before we difcovered them, they had no firituous liquors; but now, the acquirement of there is what gives a fpur to their induftry, and enjoyment to their repofe. This is the principal end they purfue in their ireaties with us; and from this they fuffer inexpreflible calamities; for, having once begun to drink, they can preferve no meafures, but continue a fucceffion of drunkennefs as long as their means of procuring liquor lafts. In this condition they lie expofed on the earth to all the inclemency of the feafons, which waftes them by a train of the moft fatal diforders; they perifh in rivers and marhes; they tumble into the fire; they quarrel, and very frequently murder each other; and, in hort, excefs in drinking, which with us is rather immoral than very deftructive, amongft this uncivilized people, who have not art enough to

170 An Account of the European
guard againft the confequence of their vices, is a public calamity. The few amongft them, who live free from this evil, enjoy the reward of their temperance in a robuft and healthy old age. The diforders which a complicated luxury has introduced, and fupports in Europe, are frangers here.

The character of the Indians is ftriking. They are grave even to fadnefs in their deportment upon any ferious occafion ; obfervant of thofe in company; refpectful to the old; of a temper cool and deliberate; by which they are never in hafte to fpeak before they have thought well upon the matter, and are fure the perfon who fpoke before them has finifhed all he had to fay. They have therefore the greateft contempt for the vivacity of the Europeans, who interrupt each other, and frequently fpeak all together. Nothing is more edifying than their behaviour in their public councils and affemblies. Every man there is heard in his turn, according as his years, his wifdom, or his fervices to his country, have ranked him. Not a word, not a whifper, not a murmur, is heard from the reft while he fpeaks. No indecent condemnation, no illtimed applaufe. The younger fort attend for their inftruction. Here they learn the hiftory of their nation; here they are inflamed with the fongs of thofe who celebrate the warlike action of their anceftors; and here they are taught
faught what are the interefts of their country, and how to purfue them.

There is no people amongft whom the laws of hofpitality are more facred, or executed with more generofity and good-will. Their houfes, their provifion, even their young women, are not enough to oblige a gueft. To thofe of their own nation they are likewife very humane and beneficent. Has any one of them fucceeded ill in his hunting? has his harveft failed? or is his houfe burned? He feels no other effect of his misfortune, than that it gives him an opportunity to experience the benevolence and regard of his fellow-citizens, who for that purpofe have all things almoft in common. But to the enemies of his country, or to thofe who have privately offended, the American is implacable. He conceals his fentiments, he appears reconciled, until by fome treachery or furprize he has an opportunity of executing an horrible revenge. No length of time is fufficient to allay his refentment; no diftance of place great enough to protect the object; he croffes the fteepeft mountains, he pierces the mof impracticable forefts, and traverfes the moft hideous bogs and deferts for feveral hundreds of miles, bearing the inclemency of the feafons, the fatigue of the expedition, the extremes of hunger and thirft, with patience and chearfulnefs, in hopes of furprizing his enemy, of whom An Account of the European
he exercifes the mof fhocking barbarities, even to the eating of his flefh. To fuch extremes do the Indians pufh their friendhip or their enmity; and fuch indeed in general is the character of all ftrong and uncultivated minds.

Notwithftanding this ferocity, no people have their anger, or at leaft the fhew of their anger, more under their command. From their infancy they are formed with care to endure fcoffs, taunts, blows, and every fort of infult patiently, or at leaft with a compofed countenance. This is one of the principal objects of their education. They efteem nothing fo unworthy a man of fenfe and conitancy, as a peevih temper, and a pronenefs to a fudden and rafh anger. And this fo far has an effect, that quarrels happen as rarely amongft them when they are not intoxicated with liquor, as does the chief caufe of all quarrels, hot and abufive language. But human nature is fuch, that, as virtues may with proper management be engrafted upon almoft all forts of vicious paffions, fo vices naturally grow out of the beft difpofitions, and are the confequence of thofe regulations that produce and ftrengthen them. This is the reafon that, when the paffions of the Americans are roufed, being fhut up, as it were, and converging into a narrow point, they become more furious; they
a:e dark, fullen, treacherous and unappearable.

A people who live by hunting; who inhabit mean cottages, and are given to change the place of their habitation, are feldom very religious. The Americans have fcarce any temples. We hear indeed of fome, and thofe extremely magnificent, amongft the ancient Mexicans and Peruvians; but the Mexicans and Peruvians were comparatively civilized nations. Thofe we know at prefent in any part of America are no, way comparable to them. Some appear to have very little idea of God. Others entertain better notions; they hold the exiftence of the Supreme Being, eternal and incorruptible, who has power over all. Satisfied with owning this, which is traditionary amongft them, they give him no fort of worfhip. There are indeed nations in America, who feem to pay fome religious homage to the fun and moon; and, as moft of them have a notion of fome invifible beings, who continually intermeddle in their affairs, they difcourfe much of demons, nymphs, fairies, or beings equivalent. They have ceremonies too, that feem to fhew they had once a more regular form of religious worihip; for they make a fort of oblation of their firft fruits; obferve certain ceremonies at the full moon; and have in their feftivals many things that very probably came from a religious

## 174. An Account of the European

origin, though they perform them as things handed down to them from their anceftors, without knowing or enquiring about the reafon. Though without religion, they abound in fuperfitions; as it is common for thofe to do, whofe fubfiftence depends, like theirs, upon fortune. Great obfervers of omens and dreams, and pryers into futurity with great eagernefs, they abound in diviners, augurs, and magicians, whom they rely much upon in all affairs that concern them, whether of health, war, or hunting. Their phyfic, which may rather be called magic, is entirely in the hands of the priefts. The fick are naturally pione to, fuperftition, and human help in fuch cafes is generally found fo weak, that it is no wonder that, in all countries and ages, people have amufed themfelves, in that difmal circumftance of human nature, with the hope of fupernatural affiftance.

Their phyficians generally treat them, in whatever diforder; in the fame way. That is, they firft enclofe them in a narrow cabbin, in the midft of which is a ftone red hot; on this they throw water, until the patient is well foaked with the warm vapour and his own fweat; then they hurry him from the bagnio, and plunge him fuddenly into the next river. This is repeated as often as they judge neceffary; and by this method extraordinary cures are fometimes performed. But it frequently happens too, that this rude method kills the patient in the very operation, efpecially in the new diforders brought to them from Europe; and, it is partly owing to this manner of proceeding, that the fmall-pox has proved fo much more fatal to them than to us. It muft not be denied that they have the ufe of fome fpecifics of wonderful efficacy; the power of which they however attribute to the magical ceremonies with which they are conftantly adminiftered. And it is remarkable, that purely by an application of herbs they frequently cure wounds, which with us refufe to yield to the mort judicious methods.

## C H A P. II.

The government of the Americans. Their councils. Their orators. Their feafts. Tbeir manm ner of adminifteringjufice.

TIBERTY, in its fulleft extent, is the darling paffion of the Americans. To this they facrifife every thing. This is what makes a life of uncertainty and want fupporiable to them; and their education is directed in fuch a manner as to cherifh this difpofition to the utmoft. They are indulged in all manner of liberty; they are never upon any account chaftifed with blows; they are rarely

176 An Account of the European
even chidden. Reafon, they fay, will guide their children when they come to the ufe of it ; and before that time their faults cannot be very great: but blows might abate the free and martial fpirit which makes the glory of their people, and might render the fenfe of honour duller, by the habit of a flavifh motive to action. When they are grown up, they experience nothing like command, dependence, or fubordination; even ftrong perfuafion is induftrioúlly forborn by thofe who have influence amongft them, as what may look too like command, and appear a fort of violence offered to their will.

On the fame principle, they know no punifhment but death. They lay no fines, becaufe they have no way of exacting them from free men; and the death, which they fometimes inflict, is rather a confequence of a fort of war declared againft a public enemy, than an act of judicial power executed on a citizen or fubject. This free difpofition is general; and, though.fome tribes are found in America with an head whom we call a king, his power is rather perfuafive than coercive, and he is reverenced as a father, more than feared as a monarch. He has no guards, no prifons, no officers of juftice. The other forms, which may be confidered as a fort of ariftocracy, have no more power. This latter is the more common in North America.

In fome tribes there are a kind of nobility; who, when they come to years of difcretion, are entitled to a place and vote in the councils of their nation : the reft are excluded. But amongft the Five nations, or Iroquois, the moft celebrated commonwealth of NorthAmerica, and in fome other nations, there is no other qualificatión abfolutely neceffary for their head men, but age, with experience and ability in their affairs. However, there is generally in every tribe fome particular ftocks which they refpect, and who are confidered in fome fort as their chiefs, unlefs they fhew themfelves unworthy of that rank; as among the tribes themfelves there are fome, who, on account of their number or bravery, have a pre-eminence over the reft; which, as it is not exacted with pride and infolence, nor maintained by tyranny on one hand, fo it is never difputed on the other when it is due.

Their great council is compofed of thefe heads of tribes and families, with fuch whofe capacity has elevated them to the fame degree of confideration. They meet in a houfe, which they have in each of their towns for the purpofe, upon every folemn occafion, to receive ambaffadors, to deliver them an anfwer, to fing their traditionary war fongs, or to commemorate their dead. Thefe councils are public. Here they propofe all fuch matters concerning the frate, as have already been

$$
\text { VOL. I. } \mathrm{N} \text { digefted }
$$

178 An Account of the European digefted in the fecret councils, at which none but the head men affiff. Here it is that their orators are employed, and difplay thofe talents which diftinguirh them for eloquence and knowledge of public bufinefs; in both of which fome of them are admirable. None elfe fpeak in their public councils; thefe are their ambaffadors, and thefe are the commiffioners who are appointed to treat of peace or alliance with other nations. The chief fkill of thefe orators confifts in giving an artful turn to affairs, and in expreffing their thoughts in a bold figurative manner, much ftronger than we could bear in this part of the world, and with geftures equally violent, but often extremely natural and expreflive.

When any bufinefs of confequence is tranfacted, they appoint a feaft upon the occafion, of which almoft the whole nation partakes. There are lefier feafts upon matters of lefs general concern, to which none are invited but they who are engaged in that particular bufinefs. At thefe feafts it is againft all rule to leave any thing; fo that if they cannot confume all, what remains is thrown into the fire ; for they look upon fire as a thing facred, and in all probability thefe feafts were anciently facrifices. Before the entertainment is ready, the principal perfon begins a fong, the fubject of which is the fabulous or real hiftory of their nation, the remarkable events which
which have happened, and whatever matters may make for their honour or inftruction. The others' fing in their turn. They have dances too, with which they accompany their fongs, chiefly of a martial kind; and no folemnity or public bufinefs is carried on without fuch fongs and dances. Every thing is tranfacted amongtt them with much ceremony ; which in a barbarous people is neceffary; for nothing elfe could hinder all their affairs from going to confufion; befides that the ceremonies contribute to fix ail tranfactions the better in their memory.

To help their memory, they have bits of fmall fhells or beads of different colours, which have all a different meaning, according to their colour or arrangement. At the end of every matter they difcourfe upon, when they treat with a foreign ftate, they deliver one of thefe belts, If they fhould omit this ceremony, what they fay paffes for nothing. Thefe beits are carefully treafured up in each town, and they ferve for the public records of the nation; and to thefe they occafionally have recourfe, when any contefts happen between them and their neighbours. Of late, as the matter of which thefe belts is made is grown fcarce, they often give fome fkin in the place of the wampum, for fo they call thefe beads in their language, and receive in return prefents of a more valuable nature; for neither

180 An Account of the European
will they confider what our commiffioners fay to be of any weight, unlefs fome prefent accompanies each propofal.

The fame council of their elders which regulates whatever regards the external policy of the ftate, has the charge likewife of its internal peace and order. Their fuits are few and quickly decided, having neither property nor art enough to render them perplexed or tedious. Criminal matters come before the fame jurifdiction, when they are fo flagrant as to become a national concern. In ordinary cafes, the crime is either revenged or compromifed by the parties concerned. If a murder is committed, the family which has lof a relation prepares to retaliate on that of the offender. They often kill the murderer, and when this happens, the kindred of the laft perfon flain look upon themfelves to be as much injured, and think themfelves as much juftified in taking vengeance, as if the violence had not begun amongft themfelves. But, in general, things are determined in a more amicable manner. The offender abfents himfelf; his friends fend a compliment of condolance to thofe of the party murdered; prefents are offered, which are rarely refufed: the head of the family appears, who in a formal ipeech delivers the prefents, which confift often of above fixty articles, every one of which is given to cancel fome part of the offence and

$$
\text { Settlements in America. } 18 \mathrm{I}
$$ to affuage the grief of the fuffering party. With the firft he fays, "By this I remove the hatchet from the wound, and make it fall out of the hands of him that is prepared to revenge the injury:" with the fecond, "I dry up the blood of that wound ;" and fo on, in apt figures; taking away one by one all the ill confequences of the murder. As ufual, the whole ends in mutual $\backslash$ fealting, fongs, and dances. If the murder is committed by one of the fame family, or cabbin, that cabbin has the full right of judgment, without appeal, within itfelf, either to punifh the guilty with death, or to pardon him, or to force him to give fome recompence to the wife or children of the flain. All this while the fupreme authority of the nation looks on unconcerned, and never roufes its ftrength, nor exerts the fulnefs of a power more revered than felt, but upon fome fignal occafion. Then the power feems equal to the occafion. Every one haftens to execute the orders of their fenate ; nor ever was any infance of difloyalty or rebellion known amongt this people. Governed as they are by manners, not by laws; example, education, and the conftant practice of their ceremonies, give them the moft tender affection for their country, and infpire them with a mott religious regard for their conftitution, and the cuftoms of their anceftors. The want of laws, and of

## 182 An Account of the European

an univerfal frong coercive power, is not perceived in a narrow fociety, where every man has his eye upon his neighbour, and where the whole bent of every thing they do is to ftrengthen thofe natural ties by which fociety is principally cemented. Family love, rare amongft us, is a national virtue amongft them, of which all partake. Friendfhips there are amongt them, fit to vie with thofe of fabulous antiquity ; and where fuch friendfhips are feen to grow, the families concerned congratulate themfelves as upon an acquifition, that promifes to them a mutual ftrength, and to their nation the greateft honour and advantage.

## C H A P. III.

Their mournings for their dead. Thbe feaft of fouls. The American women, their occupations. Their marriages and divorces.

HE lofs of any one of their people, whether by a natural death, or by war, is lamented by the whole town he belongs to *. In fuch circumftances no bufinefs is taken in hand, however important, nor any rejoicing permitted, however interenting the

[^0]
## Settlements in America. <br> 183

 occafion, until all the pious ceremonies due to the dead are performed. Thefe are always difcharged with the greateft folemnity. The dead body is wafhed, anointed, and painted, fo as in fome meafure to abate the horrors of death. Then the women lament the lofs with the moft bitter cries, and the mof hideous howlings, intermixed with fongs, which celebrate the great actions of the deceafed, and thofe of his anceftors. The men mourn in a lefs extravagant manner. The whole village attends the body to the grave, which is interred, habited in their moft fumptuous ornaments. With the body of the deceafed are placed his bow and arrows, with, what he valued moft in his life, and provifions for the long journey he is to take: for they hold the immortality of the foul univerfally, but their idea is grofs. Feafting attends this, as it does every folemnity. After the funeral, they who are nearly allied to the deceafed conceal themfelves in their huts for a confiderable time, to indulge their grief. The compliments of condolance are never omitted, nor are prefents wanting upon this occafion. After fome time, they revifit the grave; they renew their forrow; they new cloath the remains of the body, and act over again the folemnities of the firft funeral.Of all their inftances of regard to their deceafed friends, none is fo ftriking as what N 4 they

184 An Account of the European they call the feaft of the dead, or the feaft of fouls. The day of this ceremory is appointed in the council of their chiefs, who give orders for every thing which may enable them to celebrate it with pomp and magnificence. The riches of the nation are exhaufted on this occafion, and all their ingenuity difplayed. The neighbouring people are invited to partake of the feaft, and to be witneffes of the folemnity. At this time, all who have died fince the laft folemn feaft of that kind are taken out of their graves. Thofe who have been interred at the, greatef diftance from the villages are diligently fought for, and brought to this great rendezvous of carcaffes. It is not difficult to conceive the horror of this general dif-interment. I cannot paint it in a more lively manner than it is done by Lafitau.
"6 Without queftion, fays he, the opening of there tombs difplay one of the moft ftriking fcenes that can be conceived; this humbling pourtrait of human mifery, in fo many images of death, wherein the feems to take a pleafure to paint herfelf in a thoufand various fhapes of horror, in the feveral carcaffes, according to the degree in which corruption has prevailed over them, or the manner in which it has attacked them. Some appear dry and withered; others have a fort of parchment upon their bones; fome look as if they

## Settiements in America.

were baked and fmoaked, without any appearance of rottennefs; fome are juft turning towards the point of putrefaction; whilh others are all fwarming with worms, and drowned in corruption. I know not which ought to ftrike us moft, the horror of fo fhocking a fight, or the tender piety and affection of thefe poor people towards their departed friends; for nothing deferves our admitation more, than that eager diligence and attention with which they difcharge this melancholy duty of their tendernefs; gathering up carefully even the fmalleft bones; handling the carcaffes, difguftul as they are, with every thing loathfome; cleanfing them from the worms, and carrying them upon their fhoulders through tirefome journeys of feveral days, without being difcouraged by their infupportable fench, and without fuffering any other emotions to arife, than thofe of regret, for having loft perfons who were fo dear to them in their lives, and fo lamented in their death."

This ftrange feftival is the moft magnificent and folemn which they have : not only on account of the great concourfe of natives and ftrangers, and of the pompous re-interment they give to their dead, whom they drefs in the fineft fkins they can get, after having expofed them fome time in this pomp; but for the games of all kinds which they celebrate

186 An Account of the European upon the occafion, in the fpirit of thofe which the ancient Greeks and Romans celebrated upon fimilar occafions.

In this manner do they endeavour to footh the calamities of life, by the honours they pay their dead; honours, which are the more chearfully beftowed, becaufe in his turn each man expects to receive them himfelf. Though amongft thefe favage nations this cuftom is impreffed with ftrong marks of the ferocity of their nature; an honour for the dead, a tender feeling of their abfence, and a revival of their memory, are fome of the moft excellent inftruments for fmoothing our rugged nature into humanity. In civilized nations ceremonies are lefs pracfifed, becaure other inftruments for the fame purpofes are lefs wanted; but it is certain a regard for the dead is ancient and univerfal.

Though the women in America have generally the laborious part of the ceconomy upon themfelves, yet they are far from being the flaves they appear, and are not at all fubject to the great fubordination in which they are placed in countries where they feem to be more refpected. On the contrary, all the honours of the nation are on the fide of the woman. They even hold their councils, and have their fhare in all deliberations which concern the ftate; nor are they found inferior to the part they act. Polygamy is practifed by fome nations, but it is not general. In moft they content themfelves with one wife ; but a divorce is admitted, and for the fame caufes that it was allowed amongft the Jews, Greeks, and Romans. No nation of the Americans is without a regular marriage, in which there are many ceremonies; the principal of which is, the bride's prefenting the bridegroom with a plate of their corn.

Incontinent before wedlock, after marriage the chaftity of their women is remarkable, The punifhment of the adulterefs, as well as that of the adulterer, is in the hands of the hufband himfelf; and it is often fevere, as inflicted by one who is at once the party and the judge. Their marriages are not fruitful, feldom producing above two or three children, but they are brought forth with lefs pain than our women fuffer upon fuch occafions, and with little confequent weaknefs. Probably, that fevere life, which both fexes lead, is not favourable to procreation. And the habit unmarried women have of procuring abortions, in which they rarely fail, makes them the more unfit for bearing children afterwards. This is one of the reafons of the depopulation of America; for whatever loffes they fuffer, either by epidemical difeafes or by war, are repaired flowly.

## C H A P. IV.

The Indian manner of preparing for war. The fongs and dances. Their taking the field. Their method of difcovering and attacking the enemy. Their cruel treatment of their prifoners of war.

ALMOST the fole occupation of the American is war, or fuch an exercife as qualifies him for it. His whole glory confifts in this; and no man is at all confidered until he has increafed the ftrength of his country with a captive, or adorned his houfe with a fcalp of one of its enemies. When the Ancients refolve upon war, they do not always declare what nation it is they are determined to attack; that the enemy, upon whom they really intend to fall, may be off his guard. Nay, they even fometimes let years pafs over without committing any act of hoftility, that the vigilance of all may be unbent by the long continuance of the watch, and the uncertainty of the danger. In the mean time they are not idle at home. The principal captain fummons the youth of the town to which he belongs; the war kettle is fet on the fire; the war fongs and dances commence; the hatchet is fent to all the villages of the fame nation, and to all its allies;

## Settiements in America.

the fire catches; the war fongs are heard in all parts; and the moft hideous howlings continue without intermiffion day and night over that whole tract of country. The women add their cries to thofe of the men, lamenting thofe whom they have either loft in war or by a natural death, and demanding their places to be fupplied from their enemies; ftimulating the young men by a fenfe of fhame, which women know how to excite in the ftrongeft manner, and can take the beft advantage of when excited.

When by thefe, and every other means, the fury of the nation is raifed to the greateft height, and all long to embrew their hands in blood, the war captain prepares the feaft, which confifts of dog's flefh. All that partake of this feaft receive little billets, which are fo many engagements which they take to be faithful to each other, and obedient to their commander. None are forced to the war; but when they have accepted this billet, they are looked upon as lifted, and it is then death to recede. All the warriors in this affembly have their faces blackened with charcoal, intermixed with dafhes and ftreaks of vermilion, which give them a moot horrid appearance. Their hair is dreffed up in an odd manner, with feathers of various kinds. In this affembly, which is preparatory to their military expedition, the chief begins the war fong;

190 An Account of ibe European
fong; which having continued for fome time; he raifes his voice to the higheft pitch, and, turning off fuddenly to a fort of prayer; addreffes himfelf to the god of war, whom they call Arefkoni: "I invoke thee, fays he, to be favourable to my enterprize! I invoke thy care upon me and my family! I invoke ye likewife, all ye fpirits and demons good and evil! All ye that are in the fkies, or on the earth, or under the earth, to pour deftruction upon our enemies, and to return me and my companions fafely to our country." All the warriors join him in this prayer with fhouts and acclamations. The captain renews his fong, ftrikes his club againft the ftakes of his cottage, and begins the war dance, accompanied with the fhouts of all his companions, which continue as long as he dances.

The day appointed for their departure being arrived, they take leave of their friends; they change their cloaths, or whatever moveables they have, in token of mutual friendThip; their wives and female relations go out before them, and attend at fome diftance from the town. The warriors march out all dreft in their fineft apparel and moft fhowy ornaments, regularly one after another, for they never march in rank. The chief walks flowly on before them, finging the death fong, whilft the reft obferve the moft profound filence. When they come up to their women, they
they deliver up to them all their finery, put on their worft cloaths, and then proceed as their commander thinks fit.

Their motives for engaging in a war are rarely thofe views which excite us to it. They have no other end but the glory of the victory, or the benefit of the flaves which it enables them to add to their nation, or facrifife to their brutal fury; and it is rare that they take any pains to give their wars even a colour of juttice. It is no way uncommon among them for the young men to make feafts of dogs flefh, and dances, in fmall parties, in the midft of the moft profound peace. They fall fometimes on one nation, and fometimes on another, and furprize fome of their hunters, whom they fcalp and bring home as prifoners. Their fenators wink at this, or rather encourage it, as it tends to keep up the martial fpirit of their people, inures them to watchfulnefs and hardmip; and gives them an early tafte for blood.

The qualities in an Indian war are vigilance and aitention, to give and to avoid a furprize; and patience and firength, to endure the intolerable fatigues and hardfhips which always attend it. The nations of America are at an immenfe diftance from each other, with a valt defart frontier, and hid in the bofom of hideous, and almoft boundlefs forefts. Thefe muft be traverfed before they meet

## 192 An Account of the European

 meet an enemy, who is often at fuch a dif $=$ tance as might be fuppofed to prevent either quarrel or danger. But, notwithftanding the fecrecy of the deftination of the party that firft moves, the enemy has frequent notice of it, is prepared for the attack, and ready to take advantage in the fame manner of the leaft want of vigilance in the aggreffors. Their whole art of war confifts in this: they never fight in the open field, but upon fome very extraordinary occafions; not from cowardice, for they are brave; but they defpife this method, as unworthy an able warrior, and as an affair in which fortune governs more than prudence. The principal things which help them to find out their enemies, are the fmoak of their fires, which they fmell at a diftance almoft incredible; and their tracks, in the difcovery and diftinguifhing of which, they are poffeffed of a fagacity equally aftonifhing; for they will tell in the footfteps, which to us would feem moft confufed, the number of men that have paffed, and the length of time fince they have paffed; they even go fo' far as to diftinguifh the feveral nations by the different marks of their feet, and to perceive footfteps, where we could diftinguifh nothing lefs. A mind diligently intent upon one thing, and exercifed by long experience, will go lengths at firf view fcarcely credible.$$
\text { Settements in America. Ig } 3
$$

But as they who are attacked have the fame knowledge, and know how to draw the fame advantages from it, their great addrefs is to baffle each other in thefe points. On the expedition they light no fire to warm themfelves, or prepare their victual, but fubfitt merely on the miferable pittance of fome of their meal mixed with water; they lie clofe to the ground all day, and march only in night. As they march in their ufual order in files, he that clofes the rear diligently covers his own tracks, and thofe of all who preceded him, with leaves. If any fream occurs in their route, they march in it for a confiderable way to foil their purfuers. When they halt to reft and refrefh themfelves, fcouts are fent out on every fide to reconnoitre the country, and beat up every place where they fufpect an enemy may lie perdue. In this manner they often enter a village, whilft the frength of the nation is employed in hunting, and maffacre all the helplefs old men, women, and children, or make prifoners as many as they can manage, or have frength enough to be ufeful to their nation.

They often cut off fmall parties of men in their huntings; but when they difcover an army of their enemies, their way is to throw themfelves flat on their faces amongft the withered leaves, the colour of which their bodies are painted to refemble exactly. They geneVol. I.

0 rally

194 An Account of the European rally let a part pafs unmolefted; and then, rifing a little, they take aim, for they are excellent markfmen, and fetting up a moft tremendous hiout, which they call the war-cry, they pour a form of muqquet-bullets upon the enemy ; for they have long fince laid afide the ufe of arrows: the partyattacked returns the fame cry. Fivery man in hafte covers himfelf with a tree, and returns the fire of the adverfe party, as foon as they raife themfelves from the ground to give the fecond fire.

After fighting fome time in this manner, the party which thinks it has the advantage rufhes out of its cover, with fmall axes in their hands, which they dart with great addrefs and dexterity; they redouble their cries, intimidating their enemies with menaces, and encouraging each other with a boafful difplay of their own brave actions. Thus being come hand to hand, the conteft is foon decided; and the conquerors fatiate their favage fury with the moft mocking infults and barbarities to the dead, biting their fleth, tearing the fcalp from their heads, and wallowing in their blood like wild beafts.

The fate of their prifoners is the moft fevere of all. During the greateft part of their journey homewards they fuffer no injury. But when they arrive at the territories of the conquering itate, or "at thofe of their allies, the people from every village meet them, and think think they thew their attachment to their friends by their barbarous treatment of the unhappy prifoners; fo that, when they come to their ftation, they are wounded and bruifed in a terrible manner. The conquerors enter the town in triumph. The war captain waits upon the head men, and in a low voice gives them a circumftantial account of every particular of the expedition, of the damage the enemy has fuffered, and his own loffes in it. This done, the public orator relates the whole to the people. Before they yield to the joy which the victory occafions, they lament the friends which they have loft in the purfuit of it. The parties moft nearly concerned are afflicted apparently with a deep and real forrow. But, by one of thofe ftrange turns of the human mind, fafhioned to any thing by cuftom; as if they were difciplined in their grief, upon the fignal for rejoicing, in a moment all tears are wiped from their eyes, and they ruth intoan extravagance and phrenzy of joy for their victory.

In the mean time the fate of the prifoners remains undecided, until the old men meet, and determine concerning the diftribution: It is ufual to offer a flave to each houfe that has loft a friend; giving the preference according to the greatnefs of the lofs. The perfon who has taken the captive attends him to the door of the cottage to which he is delivered, and
$\mathrm{O}_{2}$
with

196 An Account of the European
with him gives a belt of wampum, to thew that he has fulfilled the purpofe of the expedition, in fupplying the lofs of a citizen. They view the prefent which is made them for fome time; and, according as they think him or her, for it is the fame, proper or improper for the bufinefs of the family, or as they take a capricious liking or difpleafure to the countenance of the victim, or in proportion to their natural barbarity or their refentment for their loffes, they deftine concerning him, to receive him into the family, or fentence him to death. If the latter, they throw away the belt with indignation. Then it is no longer in the power of any one to fave him. The nation is affembled as upon fome great folemnity. A fcaffold is raifed, and the prifoner tied to the ftake. Inftantly he opens his death fong, and prepares for the enfuing fcene of cruelty with the mof undaunted courage. On the other fide, they prepare to put it to the utmoft proof, with every torment, which the mind of man ingenious in mifchief can invent. They begin at the extremities of his body, and gradually approach the trunk. One plucks out his nails by the roots, one by one; another takes a finger into his mouth, and tears off the ferh with his teeth; a third thrufts the finger, mangled as it is, into the bole of a pipe made red hot, which he fmoaks like tobacco. Then they pound his

## Setitements in America.

 197 toes and fingers to pieces between two formes; they cut circles about his joints, and gathes in the flefhy parts of his limbs, which they \{ear immediately with red-hot irons, cuating and fearing alternately; they pull off this fleth thus mangled and roafted, bit by bit, devouring it with greedinefs, and fmearing their faces with the blood, in an enthufiafm of horror and fury. When they have thus tom off the flefh, they twift the bare nerves and tendons about an iron, tearing and finapping them; whilft others are employed in pulling and extending the limbs themfelves, in every way that can increafe the torment. This continues often five or fix hours together. Then they frequently unbind him, to give a breathing to their fury, to think what new torments they fhall inflict, and to refrefh the ftreigth of the fufferer, who, wearied out with fuch a variety of unheard-of torments, often falls immediately into fo profound a fieep, that they are obliged to apply the fire to awaken him, and renew his fufferings.He is again faftened to the ftake, and again they renew their cruelty; they ftick him all over with fmall matches of wood that eafily takes fire, but burns nowly; they continually run fharp reeds into every part of his body; they drag out his teeth with pincers, and thruft out his eyes; and laftly, after having burned his fleh from the bones with flow
i98 An Account of the European
fires; after having fo mangled the body that it is all but one wound; after having mutilated his face in fuch a manner as to carry nothing human in it; after having peeled the fkin from the heid, and poured a heap of red-hot coals or boiling water on the naked fkull; they once more unbind the wretch, who, blind and faggering with pain and weaknefs, affaulted and pelted upon every fide with' clubs and ftones, now up, now down, falling into their fires at every ftep, runs hither and thither, until one of the chiefs, whether out of compaffion or weary of cruelty, pues an end to his life with a club or a dagger. The body is then put into the kettle, and this barbarous employment is fucceeded by a feaft as barbarous.

The women, forgetting the human as well as the female nature, and transformed into fomething worfe than furies, act their parts, and even outdo the men, in this fcene of horror. The principal perfons of the country Fit round the fake fmoaking and looking on without the leaft emotion. What is moft extraordinary, the fufferer himfelf, in the little intervals of his torments, fmoaks too, appears unconcerned, and converfes with his torturers about indifferent matters. Indeed, during the whole time of his execution, there feems a conteft between him and them which fhall exceed, they in inflicting the moft horrid

## Setteements in America.

pains, or he in enduring them with a firmnefs and conftancy almort above human. Not a groan, not a figh, not a diftortion of countenance, efcapes him; he poffefes his mind entirely in the midnt of this torments; be recounts his cwn exploits, he informs them what cruelties he has inflicted upon their countrymen, and threatens them with the revenge that will attend his death; and, tho' his reproaches exafperate them to a perfect madnefs of rage and fury, he continues his reproaches even of their ignorance in the art of tormenting, pointing out himfelf more exquifite methods, and more fenfible paris of the body to be afflicted. The women have this part of courage as well as the men; and it is as rare for any Indian to behave otherwife, as it would be for an European to fufier as an Indian.

I do not dwell upon thefe circumfances of ${ }^{\circ}$ cruelty, which fo degrade human nature, out of choice; but, as all who mention the cuftoms of this people have inffited upon their behaviour in this refpeet very particularly, and as it feems neceffary to give a true idea of their character, I did not chufe to omit it. It ferves to fhew too, in the frongert light, to what an inconceivable degree of barbarity the paffions of men let loofe will carry them: It will point out to us the advantages of a religion that teaches a compal-

200 An Account of the European
fion to our enemies, which is neither known nor practifed in other religions; and it will makeus more fenfible, than fome appear to be, of the value of commerce, the art of a civilized life, and the lights of literature; which, if they have abated the force of fome of the natural virtues by the luxury which attends them, have taken out likewife the fing of our natural vices, and foftened the ferocity of the human race without enervating their courage.

On the other hand, the contancy of the fufferers in this terrible fcene fhews the wonderful power of an early inftitution, and a ferocious thirft of glory, which makes men imitate and exceed what philofophy, or even religion, can effect.

The prifoners who have the happinefs to pleafe thofe to whom they are offered have a fortune altogether oppofite to that of thofe who are condemned. They are adopted into the family, they are accepted in the place of the father, fon, or hulband, that is loft; and they have no other mark of their captivity, but that they are not fuffered to return to their own nation. To attempt this would be certain death. The principal purpofe of the war is to recruit in this manner; for which reafon a general who lofes many of his men, though he fhould conquer, is little better than difgraced at home; becaufe the end
end of the war was not anfwered. They are therefore extremely careful of their men, and never chufe to attack but with a very undoubted fuperiority, either in number or fituation.

The fcalps which they value fo much are the trophies of their bravery; with there they adorn their houfes, which are efteemed in proportion as this fort of fpoils is more numerous. They have folemn days appointed, upon which the young men gain a new name or title of honour from their head men; and thefe titles are given according to the qualities of the perfon, and his performances; of which thefe fcalps are the evidence. This is all the reward they receive for the dangers of the war, and the fatigues of many campaigns, fevere almof beyond credit. They think it abundantly fufficient to have a name given by their governors; men of ment themfelves, and judges of it; a name refpected by their countrymen, and terrible to their enemies. There are many other things fit to engage the curiofity, and even afford matter of inftructive reflexion, in the manners of this barbarous people; but thefe feem to be the moft friking, and fitteft to be infifted on in a work which is to give a general idea of America. The prefent lettlements, their commerce and productions, ought to be allowed their proper room. In which I propofe to treat, firft of

202 An Account of the European
the Spanifh colonies, as the firft difcovered and largeft object, and that in which the reft of Europe, though excluded, is the moft concerned. The Portuguefe, as neareft in place and rank, fhall be fecond. The French mall next be confidered. The Englifh fhall be referved to the laft, as the moft important to ourfelves.

End of the Second Part.



## $P \quad A \quad R \quad T \quad I I$.

## SPANISH AMERICA.



## C H A P. I.

A general defcription of Anerica.

HA VING defcribed, with as much concifenefs as the fubject would bear, the manners of the original inhabitants of America, as we had before that related the moft remarkable adventures of its, difcoverers and conquerors; it will be neceffary to view more minutely, what and how advantageous a country thefe conquefts and difcoveries have added to the world; and what are the views, interefts, and characters of thofe, who at prefent poffefs the greateft part of that extenfive region.

America extends from the North pole to the fifty-feventh degree of South latitude ; it

304 An Account of ibe European
is upwards of eight thoufarid miles in length;
it fees both hemifpheres; it has two fummers and a double winter ; it enjoys all the variety of climates which the earth affords; it is wafhed by the two great oceans. To the Eaftward it has the Atlantic ocean, which divides it from Europe and Africa. To the Weft it has another ocean, the great SouthSea, by which it is disjoined from. Afia. By thefe feas it may, and does, carry on a direct commerce with the other three parts of the world. It is compofed of two vaft continents, one on the North, the other upon the South, which are joined by the great kingdom of Mexico, which forms a fort of ifthmus fifteen hundred miles long, and in one part, at Darien, fo extremely narrow, as to make the communication between the two oceans by no means difficult. In the great gulph, which is formed between this ifhmus and the Northem and Southern continents, lie an infinite multitude of iflands, many of them large, moft of them fertile, and capable of being cultivated to very great advantage.

America in general is not a mountainous country, yet it has the greateft mountains in the world. The Andes, or Cordilleras, run from North to South along the coaft of the Pacific ocean. Though for the moft part within the torrid zone, they are perpetually covered with fnow, and in their bowels con-
tain inexhaufible treafures. In the province of St. Martha in South America are likewife very great mountains, which communicate with the former. In North America we know of none confiderable, but that long ridge which lies to the back of our fettlements, which we call the Apalachian, or Allegeney, mountains; if that may be at all confidered as a mountain, which upon one fide indeed has a very great declivity, but upon the other is nearly on a level with the reft of the country.

Without comparifon, America is that part of the world which is the beft watered; and that not only for the fupport of life, but for the convenience of trade, and the intercourfe of each part with the others. In North America the great river Milifippi, rifing from unknown fources, runs an immenfe courfe from North to South, and receives the vaft tribute of the Ohio, the Ouabache, and other immenfe rivers, fcarcely to be pontponed to the Rhine or the Danube, navigable almoft to their very fources, and laying open the inmont recefles of this continent. Near the heads of thefe are five great lakes, or rather feas of frefh water, communicating with each other, and all with the main ocean, by the river St. Laurence, which pafies through them. Thefe afford fuch an inlet for commerce as muft produce the greateft advan-

206 An Account of the European
tages, whenever the country adjacent fhall come to be fully inhabited, and by an induftrious and civilized people. The Eaftern fide of North America, which is our portion, befides the noble rivers Hudfon, Delaware, Sufquehanna, Patowmack, fupplies feveral others of great depth, length, and commodious navigation. Many parts of our fettlements are fo interfected with navigable rivers and creeks, that the planters may be faid, without exaggeration, to have each a harbour at his own door,

South America is, if poffible, in this refpect, even more fortunate. It fupplies much the two largeft rivers in the world, the river of Amazons, and the Rio de la Plata. The firf, rifing in Peru, not far from the SouthSea, paffes from Weft to Eaft, almoft quite through the continent of South America, navigable for fome fort or other of veffels all the way, and receiving into its bofom a prodigious number of rivers, all navigable in the fame manner, and fo great, that Monfieur Condamine found it often almoft impoffible to determine which was the main channel. The Rio de la Plata, rifing in the heart of the country, fhapes its courfe to the South-Eaft, and pours fuch an immenfe flood into the fea, that it makes it tafte frefh a great many leagues from the fhore; to fay nothing of the Oronoquo, which might rank the foremoft amongft any but the American rivers. The foil and products, in fuch a variety of climates, cannot fatisfactorily be treated of in a general defcription; we fhall, in their places, confider them particularly.

All America is in the hands of four nations. The Spaniards, who, as they firf difcovered it, have the largeft and richeft thare. All that part of North America, which compofes the ifthmus of Mexico, and what lies beyond that towards the river Miffifippi on the Eaft, the Pacific ocean to the Weft and North-weft; and they poffefs all South America, excepting Brafil, which lies between the mouth of the river of Amazons and that of Plata along the Atlantic ocean; this belongs to Portugal. That part of North America which the Spaniards have not, is divided between the Englifh and French. The Englifh have all the countries which incircle Hudfon's Bay, and thence in a line all along the Eaftern fhore to the thirtieth degree of North latitude. France claims the country which lies between this and the Spanifh fettlements' to the Weft, and fecures an intercourfe with them by the mouths of the Miffifippi, the Mobile, and of the river St. Laurence, which are the only avenues of navigation to this very extenfive country. The multitude of Inands, which lie between the two continents, are divided amonglt the Spaniards,

208 An Account of the European niards, French, and Englifh. The Dutch poffefs three or four fmall iflands, which, in any other hands, would be of no confequence. The Danes have one or two; but they hardly deferve to be named amongft the proprietors. of America.

## C H A P. II.

The climate and foil of New Spain. Animals. Its vegetable produce.

THE order which I intend to obferve in treating of the Spanifh colonies is, after having fet forth their fituation, their climate, and the nature of the foil, to defcribe thofe commodities in which they trade; to give a clear and concife account of their method of manufacturing them; and then to lay open the maaner of their dealing in them, as well as that by which they carry on their foreign commerce. Laft of all, I fhall fay fomething of the genius and temper of the inhabitants; of fuch cuftoms of theirs as are remarkable, and of their civil policy, and of their military, fo far as they are come to my knowledge, or as they are worthy the attention of the reader. The exact divifion of the provinces, the courfes of the rivers, the diftances of places, the dimenfions of harbours and their foundings; all thefe, as they are infinitely
finitely better known from maps and charts, fo it would be impertinent and tedious to fill up this fhort work with them, which propofes to give, even thortas it is, a defcription of every thing that may tend to a juft notion of America; and therefore cannot facrifife matters of more moment to the defcription of things, of which a far better idea may be acquired by other means to thofe whom they concern; and to thofe whom they do not intereft, who are far the majority, muft be tedious and uninftructive.

The firft country which the Spaniards fettled upon the continent of America was Mexico; and it ftill continues their principal fettlement, whether we confider its number of inhabitants, its natural wealth, or its extended traffic. As it lies for the moft part within the torrid zone, it is exceffively hot; and on the Eaftern coaft, where the land is low, marthy, and conftantly flooded in the rainy feafons, it is likewife extremely unwholefome; neithei is that coaft plearant in any refpect; incumbered for the moft part with almoft impenetrable woods of mangrove trees, of a bare and difagreeable afpect, and which extend into the water for a confiderable way. The inland country affumes a moro agreeable afpect, and the air is of a better temperament; here the tropical fruits grow in great abundance; the land is of a good variety, and would

Vol. I.

210 An Account of the Europefin
not refufe any fort of grain, if the number or indultry of the inhabitants were any way proportioned to the goodnefs of the foil. But on the Weftern fide the land is not fo low as on the Eaftern, much better in quality, and full of plantations.

It is probable the Spaniards chufe to leave the Eaftern coaft in its prefent ftate of rude-nefs and defolation, judging that a rugged and unwholefome frontier is a better defence againtt an European enemy, than fortifications and armies, to be maintained at a vaft expence; or than the ftrength of the inhabitants, made by the climate effeminate and pufillanimous, and kept fo by policy: and indeed it would be next to impofifle to make any confiderable eftablifhment on that coaft, that could effectually anfwer the purpofes of any power in Europe, without ftruggling with the greateft difficulties; and as for a fudden invafion, the nature of the country itfelf is a good fortification. In general, few countries, under the fame afpect of the heavens, enjoy more of the benefits of nature and the neceffaries of life; bui, like all the tropical countries, it rather is more abundant in fruits than in grain. Pine apples, pomegranates, oranges, lemons, citrons, figs, and cocoa nuts, are here in the greateft plenty and perfection. Vines and apples require temperate climates.

The

## Settements in America. zif

The number of their horned cattle is in a manner infinite ; fome private perfons are faid to have poffeffed forty thoufand head ; many are wild, and a very confiderable trade is driven in their hides and tallow, but the extreme heat prevents their turning the flefh to any account in commerce. Swine are equally numerous, and their lard is much in requert all over this country, where it is ufed inftead of butter. Sheep are numerous in Mexico, but I do not find that wool is an article of any great confideration in their trade; nor is it probable that it is of a good kind, as it is fcarce ever found ufeful between the tropics, where it is hairy and fhort;' except only in Peru; and that is the produce of theep of a fpecies very different from that in the reft of America; as Peru is itfelf remarkably different in climate from all other countries under the torrid zone. But cotton is here very good, and in great plenty. It is manufactured largely, for, as it is very light and fuitable to the climate, and all other cloathing being extravagantly dear, it is the general wear of the inhabitants; the woollens and linens of Europe being rather luxuries, and worn only by perfons of fome corrdition. Some provinces produce filk, but not in that abundance or perfection to make a remarkable part of their export; not but that the country is very fit for that, and many other things valuable, which are but little cultivatP 2

212 An Account of the European ed; for the gold and filver, which make the glory of this country, and in the abundant treafures of which it exceeds all the world, engage almoft the whole attention of the inhabitants, as they are almoft the only things for which the Spaniards value their colonies, and what alone receive the encouragement of the court; therefore I hall infift moft largely upon thefe articles. After that, I fhall fpeak of thofe commodities, which are produced here of moft importance in foreign commerce, and reft upon them in proportion to their importance. Thefe are cochineal, indigo, and cacao, of which chocolate is made. As for fugar, and tobacco, and indigo, though no part of the world produces better than Mexico; and as for logwood, though it be in a manner peculiar to this country; yet, as the firft is largely raifed and manufactured elfewhere, and as ourown commerce in the two laft is what chiefly interefts an Englifh reader, I fhall referve them to be treated of in the divifion I allot to the Englifh colonies.

## C H A P. III.

The gold and filver mines. The manner of purifying thofe metals. Some thoughts on the generation of metals. Of the quantity of thofe metals produced in the Spanifb Weft-Indies.

IT is not known with certainty, whether all or fome provinces only of New Spain produce mines of gold and filver. It is, however, allowed that the chief mines of gold are in Veragua and New Granada, confining upon Darien and Terra Firma. Thofe of filver, which are much more rich as well as numerous, are found in feveral parts, but in none fo much as in the province of Mexico. But all the mines, whether of gold or filver, are generally found in the mountainous and barren parts; nature often making amends one way for her failures in another.

Gold is found either in the fand of rivers, native, and in fmall grains, or it is dug out of the earth in the fame condition in fmall bits, almoft wholly metallic, and of a tolerable purity; or it is found, like the ore of othermetals, in an aggregate opaque mafs, in a mixture of earth, ftone, fulphur, and other metals. In this fate it is of all colours, red, white, blackifh, and making little or no oftentation of the riches it contains. Sometimes it forms part

$$
P_{3}
$$

214 An Account of the European of the ornament of fome beautiful ftones, which are of various lively colours, interfected with filaments of this metal, quite native. Lapis lazuli is one of thefe, which has always fome fimall portions of gold; but this golderi ftecaking is often extremely fallacious, and has betrayed many into ruinous expences; for in feveral ftones thefe fine veins have been nothing more than marcafite: however, fuch marcafites or fire-ftones are found in mines, which contain real gold. But gold, howfoever found, whether native or in what is called the ore, is feldom or never without a mixture of other metals, generally filver or copper.

The gold mines, though they contain the richeft of all metals, it is remarkable, moft frequently difappoint the hopes, and ruin the fortunes, of thofe who engage in them ; tho' neither the labouring of the mine, nor the purifying the of metal, is attended with fuch an expence as what thofe are obliged to, who work mines of the inferior metals. For the vein is, of all others, the moft unequal ; fometimes very large, full, and rich; then it often decays by a quick gradation, and is fometimes fuddenly loft. But the ends of the veins are, on the other hand, often extremely rich; they are called the purfe of the vein; and when the miner is fo happy as to light on one of thefe purfes, his fortune is made immediately.

When the ore is dug out, the moft ufual method is to break it to pieces in a mill, exactly refembling thofe large ones we ufe for grinding apples, wherein a mill-ftone fet on end is made to turn in a circular channel of fone. When the ore is thus broke, and the gold fomewhat feparated, from the impure mafs, they add to the whole a quantity of quickfilyer. Quickfilver has, of all other bodies, the greateft attraction with gold, which therefore immediately breaks the links which held it to the former earth, and clings clofe to this congenial fuoftance. Then a rapid fream of water is let into the channel, which, fcouring away (through a hole made for the purpofe) the lighter earth, by the brifknefs of its current, leaves the gold and mercury precipitated by its weight at the bottom. This amalgama, or pafte, is put into a linen cloth, and fqueezed fo as to make the quickfilver feparate and run out. To compleat this feparation, it is neceffary to fufe the metal, and then all the mercury flies off in fumes.

Butin many parts of Spanifh America, another way of getting and purifying gold is practifed. When by fure tokens they know that gold lies in the bed of a rivulet, they turn the current into the inward angles, which time and the fream have formed; whilft this runs,
they

216 An Account of the European they dig and turn up the earth, to make it the more eafliy diffolved and carried off. When the furface is thus completely wafhed away, and they are come toa fort of fiff earth, which is the receptacle of gold, they return the fream into its former channel, and dig up the earth as they find it, which they carry to a little bafon fomewhat in the form of a fmith's bellows. Into this they turn a frnall but a lively fream, to carry of the foreign matter, whilit they facilitate the operation by firring the mals with an iron hook, which diffolves the earth, and gathers up the fones, which are carefully thrown out that they may not interrupt the paffages that carry off the earth. By this means the gold, loofened from the grofs matter which adhered to it, falls to the bottom, but mixed fo intimately with a black heavy fand, that none of the gold can be perceived, unlefs it happens to be a pretty large grain. To feparate it from this fand, it is put into a fort of wooden platter, with a little hollow of about the depth of half an inch at bottom. This platter they fill with water, and, turning the mafs about brikk with their hands for tome time, the fand paffes over the cdges, and leaves the gold in fmall grains, pure, and of its genuine colour, in the hollow at the bottom. Thus is gold refined without fire or mercury, mertly by wafhing. The places where this is performed are called there-
therefore Lavaderos by the Spaniards. There are many more methods of extracting and purifying this precious metal; but thefe are the mof common ways ufed by the Spaniards in their Indies.

Silver is the metal next in rank, but firft in confequence in the Spanifh traffic, as their mines yield a much greater quantity of the latter than of the former. It is found in the earth under different forms, as indeed the ore of all metal is. Such is the diverfity of ores in this refpect, that nothing but a long experience in this particular branch can exactly afcertain the fpecies of the metal, which almoft any ore contains at firft view. I have feen fpecimens wherein the filver, almont pure, twined itfelf about a white fone, penetrating into the interfices in the fame manner that the roots of trees enter into the rocks, and twift themfelves about them. Some are of an aft-coloured appearance, others fpotted of a red and blue, fome of changeable colours, and many almoft black, affecting fomewhat of a pointed regular form like cryftals. I cannot find that it is ever found in grains or fand, native, as gold is.

The manner of refining filver does not differ effentially from the procefs which is employed for gold. They are both purified upon the lame principle; by clearing away as much of the earth as can be, with water; by unit-
218. An Account of the European ing or amalgamating it with mercury; and afterwards by clearing off the mercury itfelf, by ftraining and evaporation. But the management of filver in this refpect is much more difficult than that of gold; becaufe this metal is much more intimately united with the foreign matters with which it is found in the mine; and its attraction with mercury is much weaker; therefore there is great care taken in the amalgamation, and it is a long time before they are perfectly mixed. A quantity of feafalt is likewife added. No filver is had by mere wafhing.

The chemifts have talked very freely of the production of thefe and other metals in the earth; of the falt, fulphur, and mercury, that compofe them; and the manner in which thefe fubftances are united and changed, fo as to form metals and minerals of every fpecies. Some have recourfe to the fun as the great agent in this procefs, efpecially in gold and filver, as the moft worthy fuch an operator. Others call in the aid of fubterraneous fires and central heat. But in reality they have advanced very little that is fatisfactory upon this fubject. They have never, by any method of joining the matters which they have affigned as the confituent parts of metals, in any proportions whatfoever, nor by any degrees of their great agent fire, been able to make metal of that which was not metal before. Neither have
they found what they allot as the component parts of all metals in fuch a manner in all, as to enable them to fix any common principle for their generation. Some they cannot analyfe by any art, as gold; they indeed define it a compofition of a very fubtile mercury, and a fulphur as fubtile.

But how this comes to be known, when no procefs hitherto difcovered has been able to extract either of thefe from gold, they who have advanced fuch things ought to tell. It is reafonable to believe, that there is fome plaftic principle in nature, perhaps fomething analogous to the feminal principle in plants and animals, whatever that is, which does not, as we know, refemble any known body, nor is compofed of any combination of known bodies; but powerful of itfelf to combine and vary fuch a part of the common ftock of matter as it is fitted to operate upon, which it draws to itfelf, and caufes to form an animal, or a plant, or a mineral, or metal, of this or that nature, according to the original nature of the feed. Suppofe a plant fubjected to all the torture of the chemical queftion: you find it contains various matters; an earth, water, oil, falt, fpirit, and in the three laft perhaps fomething fpecific, and differing from other plants. But neither the fame quantities of fimilar matter, nor thefe very matters themfelves, can

## 220 An Account of the European

ever come to form a plant like the original, or any thing like a plant at all, becaufe the feminal virtue is wanting; nor is it perhaps difcoverable. And as for the other matters, they are the inert parts of the plant ; without power themfelves, they are the materials with which, and on which, the feminal virtue acts, to organize the mafs, to fpread the branches, to fhoot out the gems, to mature the fruit, and in hort to perform all the functions of a complete plant. The fame may be faid of animals. And why not of minerals, though of a lefs nice organization? Why Should they not have the feminal principle too, which, operating, by its own power and in a way of its own, upon the elements of air, earth, water, oil, and falt, is capable of producing iron, copper, gold, filver, and other metals. The want of this will always hinder us from being able to produce any metal from other than metalline ingredients, though we fhould take fuch things as refemble the ingredients they yield upon an analyfis, and in the fame quantities in which we find them. This I do not fay as favouring the notion that ftones and metals vegetate exactly like plants. That thefe are often found where they had formerly been exhaufted, and that they are known to extend their dimenfions, is pretty certain; but that they affimilate the heterogeneous matter which increafes their bulk,
in a manner analogous to plants, I cannot venture to propofe. It muft be allowed that filver has been found, and I have fo feen it, extending itfelf among the interfices of fones, not unlike ivy and other parafite plants ; yet, as a metal no way differing from it, or at all inferior, is extracted from ores, which have an appearance altogether different, and which too is the ufual way, it is probable the manner in which they grow is not the fame.

What I had to fay of gold and filver, as both are found, and the latter in vaft quantities, in Mexico, I thought proper, for the fake of avoiding repetitions, to bring under this head, though all the reft of the Spanifh territories produce largely of both.

Of the plenty of gold and filver, which the mines of Mexico afford, great things have been faid, and with juftice; as this, with the other Spanifh colonies in America, in a manner furnith the whole world with filver; and bear a great proportion in gold to the whole of what the world produces. A late very judicious collector of voyages fays, that the revenues of Nexico can hardly fall fhore of twenty-four millions of our money. He founds this upon a return made by the bifiops of their tenths, which, without doubt, were not over-rated; and that thefe amounted to one million and a half ferling; that thefe are about a fourth of the revenues of the clergy;

222 An Account of the Europeais and that the eftates of the clergy are about the fourth part of the whole revenues of the kingdom, which at this rate amount to twentyfour millions Englifh. He takes another method of computing the wealth of this province, which is, by the fifth paid to the king of the gold and filver dug out of their mines. This, he obferves, in the year 1.730, amounted to one million of marks in filver, each mark equivalent to eight ounces; fo that if we compute this filver at five fhillings per ounce, then the inhabitants receive from their mines ten millions in money. What a prodigious idea muft this calculation give us of the united product of all the American mines! How much muft be allowed in this account for the exaggeration of travellers, and the oftentation of Spaniards, I will not pretend to determine. The plate circulated in trade, or lying dead as the ornaments of churches and houfes, though a great deal is undoubtedly employed in all thefe ways, did not feem to me to juftify fo vaft a computation; but, as the gentleman who has confidered this point with uncommon attention is of another opinion, I wave any further obfervation upon it.

## C H A P. IV.

## Of coobineal and cacao.

COCHINEAL, the next commodity for value which they export, is ufed in dyeing all the feveral kinds of the fineft fcarlet, crimfon, and purple. After much difpute about the nature of this curious drug, it feems at laft agreed, that it is of the animal kind; an infect of the fpecies of the gall-infects. This animal is found adhering to various plants, but there is only one which communicates to it the qualities which make it valuable in medicine and manufactures. This plant is called Opuntia by the botanifts. It confifts wholly of thick fucculent oval leaves, joined end to end, and fpreading out on the fides in various ramifications. The flower is large, and the fruit in fhape refembling a fig; this fruit is full of a crimfon juice, and to this juice it is that the cochineal infect owes its colour.

When the rainy feafons come on, they who cultivate this plant, cut off thofe heads which abound moft with fuch infects, as are not yet at their full growth; and preferve them very carefully from the weather and all other injuries. Thefe branches, though feparated from their parent focks, preferve their frefh-

## 224 An Account of the European

 nefs and juices a long time; and this enables the infect not only to live out the rains, but to grow to it's full fize, and be in readinefs to bring forth its young, as foon as the inclemency of the feafon is over. When this time comes on, they are brought out, and placed upon the proper plants, difpofed in little nefts of fome mofy fubftance. As foon as they feel the enlivening influence of the frefh air, they bring forth in three or four days from their expofure at farthef. The young, fcarce bigger than a mite, runs about with wonderful celerity, and the whole plantation is immediately peopled; yet, what is fomewhat fingular, this animal, fo lively in its infancy, quickly lofes all its activity, and, attaching itfelf to fome of the leaft expofed and moft fucculent part of the leaf, it clings there forlife, without ever moving, not wounding the leaf for its fuftenance, but fucking with a probofcis, with which it is furnifhed for this purpofe.What is not lefs remarkable than the way of life of this animal, is the nature of the male, which has no appearance of belonging to the fame fpecies; far from being fixed to a fpot, he has wings, and is, like the butterfly, continually in motion; they are fmaller than the cochineal, and conftantly feen amongft them, and walking over them without being fufpected by thofe who take care of the infect,
of being a creature of the fame kind, though they believe that the cochineals are impregnated by them. But it is the female cochineal only which is gathered for ufe.

They make four gatherings in a year, which are fo many generations of this animal. When they are fufticiently careful, they brufh off the infects one by one with a fort of hair pencils, and take them as they fall; but they often brufh the whole plant in a carelefs manner, fo that fragments of it are mixed with the cochineals, and themfelves mixed, the old and young together, which careleffnefs abates much of the value; but what chiefly makes the goodnefs of this commodity is, the manner of killing and drying the cochineals, which is performed three ways; the firft is by dipping the bafket in which it is gathered into boiling water, and afterwards drying them in the fun; this the Spaniards call renegrida. The fecond method is by drying them in ovens made for the purpofe; this, from its grey colour, veined with purple, is called jafpeads. The third manner is, when the Indians dry them on their cakes of maize which are baked on flat fones; this laft is the worft kind, as it is generally overbaked, and fomething burned. They call it negra.

This drus has a very uncommon good quality, and the more extraordinary as it belongs to the animal kingdom, and to the moft

Vol. 1.
perifh-

226 An Account of the European perifhable of that kind, that it never decays. Without any other care than having been put by in a box, fome have been known to keep fixty, fome even upwards of a hundred years, and as fit for the purpofes of medicine, or manufacture, as ever it was. It is ufed in medicine as a cordial and fudorific, in which intentions few things anfwer better. And indeed, as it anfwers fuch good purpofes in medicine, is fo effential in trade, and produced only in this country, it may be confidered in all markets as equivalent to gold or filver, by the certainty and quicknefs of the fale. It is computed they annually export no. lefs than nine hundred thoufand pound weight of this commodity.

The cocao, or cacao, of which chocolate is made, is a confiderable article in the natural hiftory and commerce of New Spain. It grows upon a tree of a middling fize ; the wood is fpungy and porous, the bark fmooth, and of a cinamon colour: the flower grows in bunches between the ftalks and the wood, of the form of rofes, but fmall, and without any fcent. The fruit is a fort of pod, which contains the cacao, much about the fize and fhape of a cucumber. Within there is a pulp of a moft refrefhing acid tafte, which fills up the interftices between the nuts before they are ripe; but, when they fully ripen, thefe nuts are packed up wonderfully clofe, and in a moft
a moft regular and elegant order ; they have a pretty tough fhell, and within this is the oily rich fubftance, of which chocolate is made. This fruit grows differently from our European fruits, which always hang upon the fmall branches; but this grows along the body of the great ones, principally at the joints. None are found upon the fmall; which, though it is a manner of vegetation unknown here, prevails in feveral other plants within the tropics. This cacao is a very tender tree, equally impatient of the wind, heat or cold, and will flourim only in the fhade; for which reafon, in the cacao walks, they always plant a palm-tree for every one of cacao. I need fay little of the ufe of this fruit; it is general amongft ourfelves, and its virtues well known; but, however the great external call for it may be, the internal confumption is much greater: fo that in Mexico and Tera Firma, in fome provinces of which latter it is found in the greateft perfection, their fom reign and domeftic commerce in this article is immenfe, and the profits fo great, that a fmall garden of the cacao's is faid to produce twenty thoufand crowns a year ; though I believe this to be exaggerated: it thews, however, in what a light of profit this commodity is confidered. At home it makes the principal part of their diet, and is found wholefome, nutritious, and fuitable to the climate.

This

228 An Account of the European
This fruit is often confounded with the cocoa nut, which is a fpecies wholly different.

## C H A P. V.

The trade of Mexico. Some account of that city. The fairs of Acapulca and La Vera Cruz. The flota and regiter Joips.

TH E trade of Mexico may be confidered as confifting of three great branches by which it communicates with the whole world; the trade with Europe by La Vera Cruz ; the trade with the Eaft-Indies by Acapulco; and the commerce of the South-Sea by the fame port. The places in New Spain, which can intereft a ftranger, are therefore three only, La Vera Cruz, Acapulco, and Mexico.

Mexico, the capital of the kingdom, the refidence of the viceroy, the feat of the firft audience or chamber of juftice, and an archbifhopric, is certainly one of the richeft and moft fplendid cities, not only in America, but in the whole world. Though no fea-port town, nor communicating with the fea by any navigable river, it has a prodigious commerce, and is itfelf the center of all that is carried on between America and Europe on one hand, and between America and the Eaf-Indies on the other; for here the principal
cipal merchants refide, the greateft part of the bufinefs is negotiated; and the goods fent from Acapulco to La Vera Cruz, or from La Vera Cruz to Acapulco, for the ufe of the Philippines, and in a great meafure for the ufe of Peru and Lima, all pafs through this city, and employ an incredible number of horfes and mules in the carriage. Hither all the gold and filver come to be coined, here the king's fifth is depofited, and here is wrought all that immenfe quantity of utenfils and ornaments in plate, which is every year fent into Europe. Every thing here has the greateft air of magnificence and wealth ; the fhops glitter upon all fides with the expofure of gold, filver, and jewels, and furprize yet more by the work of the imagination upon the treafures which fill great chefts piled up to the cielings, whilft they wait the time of being fent to Old Spain. It is faid that the negro wenches, who run by the coaches of the ladies there, wear bracelets of gold, pearl necklaces, and jewels in their ears, whilft the black foot-boys are all over covered with lace and embroidery. It cannot exactly be afcertained what number of people are in this city. It is certainly very confiderable, by many not made lefs than feventy or eighty thoufand. This city itfelf is well and regularly built, though the houfes are not lofty; the monafteries are numerous, and richly en-
$23^{\circ}$ An Account of the European
dowed, and the churches extravagantly rich in their ornaments, though comparatively poor in the tafte of their architecture.

The pori neareft to this city is Acapulco, upon the South-Sea, upwards of two hundred niles diftant from the capital. Acapulco itfelf has one of the deepeft, fecuref, and moft commodious harbours in the South-Sea, and indeed almot the only one which is good upon the Weftern coant of New Spain. The entrance of the harbour is defended by a caftle of tolerable ftrength; the town itfelf is but ill built, and makes every way a miferable figure, except at the time of the fairs, when it intirely changes its appearance, and becomes one of the moft confiderable marts in the world. About the month of December, the great galleon, which makes the whole communication that is between America and the Philippines, after a voyage of five months, and failing three thoufand leagues without feeing any other land than the Little Ladrones, arrives here loaded with all the rich commodities of the eaft; cloves, pepper, cinamon, nutmegs, mace, china, japan wares, callicoes plain and painted, chints, mullins of every fort, filks, precious fones, rich drugs, and gold duft. At the fame time the annual fhip from Lima comes in, and is not computed to bring lefs than two millions of pieces of eight in filver, befides quickfilver, cacao, drugs,
drugs, and other valuable commodities, to be laid out in the purchafe of the commodities of the Eaft-Indies. Several other Thips from different parts of Chili and Peru meet upon the fame occafion; and, befides the traffic for the Philippine commodities, this caufes a very large dealing for every thing thofe countries have to exchange with one another, as well as for the purchafe of all forts of European goods. The fair lafts fometimes for thirty days. As foon as the goods are difpofed of, the galleon prepares to fet out on her voyage to the Philippines with her returns, chiefly in filver, but with fome European goods too, and fome other commodities of America. I fpeak here, as though there were but one veffel on the trade with the Philippines; and in fact there is only nominally one trading veffel, the galleon itfelf, of about twelve hundred tuns; but another attends her commonly as a fort of convoy, which generally carries fuch a quantity of goods as pretty much difables her from performing that office. The galleon has often above a thoufand people on board, either interefted in the cargo, or merely paffengers; and there is no trade in which fo large profits are made; the captain of the veffel, the pilots, their mates, and even the common failors, making in one voyage, what in their feveral ranks may be confidered as eafy fortunes. It is faid, by the writer of Lord
$23^{2}$ An Account of the European
Anfon's voyage, that the jefuits have the profits of this fhip to fupport their miffions; and if fo, their gains muft be extremely great, and muft add much to the confequence of a fociety which has as great a reputation for its riches as its wifdom.

This commerce to fo vaft a value, though carried on directly between the king of Spain's own dominions, enriches them in proportion but very little; the far greater part of every thing that comes from the Philippines being the produce, or the fabric, of other countries; the Spaniards add none of the artificial value of labour to any thing. The Chinefe are largely interefted in this cargo, and it is to them they are indebted for the manufacturing of fuch of their plate, as is wrought into any better fafhion than rude ingots or inelegant coins. When this fair is over, the town is comparatively deferted; however, it remains for the whole year the moft confiderable port in Mexico, for the trade.with Peru and Chili, which is not very great. The Eaft-India goods brought hither are carried on mules to Mexico, from whence what exceeds their own confumption is fent by land carriage to Ja Vera Cruz, to pafs over the Terra Firma, to the iflands, and fome even to Old Spain, though in no great quantity.

From the port of La Vera Cruz it is that the great wealth of Mexico is poured out
upon all the old world; and it is from this port alone, that they receive the numberlefs luxuries and neceffaries that the old world yields them in return. To this port the annual fleet from Cadiz, called the flota, arrives about the latter end of November, after a paffage of nine weeks. This fleet, which fails only from Cadiz, confifts of about three men of war as a convoy, and fourteen or fifteen large merchant fhips, from four hundred to one thoufand tuns burthen. Thiey are loaded almoft with every fort of goods which Europe produces for export; all forts of woollens, linens, filks, velvets, laces, glafs, paper, cutlery; all forts of wrought iron, watches, clocks, quickfilver, horfe furniture, fhoes, foockings, books, pictures, military ftores, wines, and fruits; fo that all the trading parts of Furope are highly interefted in the cargo of this fleet. Spain itfelf fends out little more than the wine and fruit. This, with the freight and commiffions to the merchant and the duty to the king, is almoft all the advantage which that kingdom derives from her commerce with the Indies. It is ftrictly prohibited to load any commodities on board this fleet without entering the goods, the value, and the owner's name, in the India-houfe at Seville; and when they return, they muit bring a certificate, from the proper officer there, that the goods were duly landed, and

234 An Account of the European
in the proper port. They are not permitted to break bulk upon any account until they arrive at La Vera Cruz, nor are they fuffered to take in any other than Spanifh paffengers, nor them without a licence firft obtained at the India-houfe.

Jealoufy is the glaring character of the court of Spain, in whatever regards their American empire; and they often facrifife the profperity to an exceffive regard to the fecurity of their poffemions. They attend in this trade principally to two objects; the exclufion of all ftrangers from any fhare in it, and the keeping up of the market for fuch goods as they fend; and they think both thefe ends beft anfwered by fending out only one annual fleet, and that from one only port in Spain, and to one port only in Mexico. Thefe views, which would be impolitic in any power in Europe befides, are judicious enough in Spain; becaufe, the goods they fend belonging moftly to ftangers, and the profits upon the fale in the Indies being the only thing that really accrues to themfelves, it is certainly right to confult primarily how they fhall get the greateft returns upon the fmalleft quantity of goods. It would be quite otherwife, if all, or moft of what they fend abroad, were their own produce or manufacture. They are undoubtedly right too in keeping the trade very carefully to themfelves, though

## Settlements in America. 235

 perhaps the means taken to attain this end will not be thought fo rational. By fuffering all the trade to be carried on only between two ports, they difcourage in the old world all their towns from that emulation, which would not only enable them to traffic in foreign commodities, but in time to fet up fabrics of their own; whereas now, with regard to the export of their commodities, they ftand upon the level of ftrangers; they cannot carry their produce directly to the beft market; and it is very certain, that even trifling difcouragéments operate very powerfully where the commercial fpirit is weak, and the trade in its infancy. Again; in the new world, this confinement of the trade encourages interlopers, and an illicit commerce, too gainful for any regulation to prevent, and which may afford fuch bribes as will difarm the moft rigid juftice and lull the moft attentive vigilance. So that in reality it may greatly be doubted, whether the precautions, fo fyftematically purfued, and improved from time to time with fo much care and forefight, are at bottom of mon advantage or prejudice to that nation. It was probably fome confideration of this kind, that firf gave rife to the cuftom of regifer hips: it was found that this confined commerce fupplied its extenfive object very imperfectly; and that thofe who were at watch to pour in contraband goods would236 An Account of the European
take advantage of this want of a regular fupply from Spain. When therefore a company of merchants of Cadiz or Seville judge that goods muft be wanting at any certain port in the Weft-Indies, the courfe is, to petition the council of the Indies for licence to fend a fhip of three hundred tuns, or under, to that port. They pay for this licence forty or fifty thoufand dollars, befides prefents to the officers, in proportion to the connivance neceffary to their defign; for, though the licence runs to three hundred tuns at the utmoft, the veffel fitted out is feldom really lefs than fix hundred. This thip and cargo is regiftered at the pretended burthen. It is required too, that a certificate be brought from the king's officer at the port to which the regifter fhip is bound, that fhe does not exceed the fize at which fhe is regiftered; all this paffes of courfe; thefe are what they call regifter hips, and by thefe the trade of Spanifh America has been carried on principally for fome years paft, fome think, as much to the prejudice of their trade, as contrary to all their former maxims in carrying it on. But to return to the flota.

When all the goods are landed and difpofed of at La Vera Cruz, the fleet takes in the plate, precious ftones, cochineal, indigo, cacao, tobacco, fugar, and hides, which are their returns for Old Spain. Sometimes in

May,

May, but more frequently in Auguft, they are ready to depart. From La Vera Cruz they fail to the Havanna in the ifle of Cuba, which is the place of rendezvous where they meet the galleons; another fleet, which carries on all the trade of Terra Firma by Carthagena, and of Peru by Panama and Porto-bello, in the fame manner that the flota ferves for that of New Spain. When they arrive at this port, and join the galleons and the regifter fhips that collect at the fame port from all quarters, fome of the cleaneft and beft failing of their veffels are difpatched to Spain, with advice of the contents of thefe feveral fleets, as well as with treafure and goods of their own, that the court may judge what indulto or duty is proper to be laid on them, and what convoy is neceffary for their fafety. Thefe fleets generally make fome ftay at the Havanna before all the fhips that compofe them are collected and ready to fail. As foon as this happens, they quit the Havanna, and beat through the gulph of Florida, and, paffing between the Bahama inlands, hold their courle to the North-Eaft, until they come to the height of St. Auguftin, and then fteer away to Old Spain. When the flota has left La Vera Cruz, it has no longer the appearance of a place of confequence; it is a town in a very unhealthy fituation, inhabited fcarcely by any but Indians, Meztezes, or Negroes.
$23^{8}$ An Account of the Eutopean
All the merchants of any confequence refide at fome diftance, at a place called Los Angelos. This town may contain about three thoufand inhabitants.

## C H A P. VI.

Three forts of people in New Spain. The Whites, Indians, and Negroes; the characters of thole. The clergy, their characters. The civil governinent, its cbaracter.

THE inhabitants of New Spain are compored of people of three different races; Whites, Indians, and Negroes, or the feveral mixtures of thofe. The Whites are either born in Old Spain, or they are Creoles; thofe who are native Spaniards are moftly in offices, or in trade, and have the fame character and manners with the Spaniards of Europe; the fame gravity of behaviour, the fame natural fagacity and good fenfe, the fame indolence, and yet a greater thare of pride and fatelinefs; for here they look upon the being natives of Old Spain as a very honourable diftinction, and are in return looked upon by the Creoles with no fmall hare of hatred and envy. The latter have little of that firmnefs and patience which makes one of the fineft parts of the character of the native Spaniard. They have little courage, and are univerfally
weak and effeminate. Living as they do in a conftantenervating heat, furfeited with wealth, and giving up their whole time to loitering and inactive pleafures, they have nothing bold or manly to fit them for making a figure in active life; and few or none have any tafte for the fatisfaction of a learned retirement. Luxurious without variety or elegance, and expenfive with great parade and little conveniency, their general character is no more than a grave and fpecious infignificance.

They are temperate at their tables and in their cups, but, from idlenefs and conftitution, their whole bufinefs is amour and intrigue; thefe they carry on in the old Spanifh tafte, by doing and faying extravagant things, by bad mufic, worfe poetry, and exceffive expences. Their ladies are little celebrated for their chafity or domeftic virtues; but they are ftill a good deal reftrained by the old-fathioned etiquette, and they exert a genius, which is not contemptible, in combating the reftraints which that lays them under.

The clergy are extremely numerous, and their wealth and influence cannot be doubted amongft fo rich and fuperfitious a people. It is faid, that they actually poffefs a fourth of the revenues of that whole kingdom; which, after all abatements, certainly amounts to feveral millions. And as to their numbers, it is not extravagant to fay, that priefts, monks,

## 240 An Account of the European

and nuns of all orders, are upwards of one fifth of all the white people, both here and in the other parts of Spanih America. But, the clergy here being too ignorant in general to be able inftructors by their preaching, and too loofe and debauched in their own manners to inftruct by their example, the people are little the better for their numbers, wealth, or influence. Many of them are no other than adventurers from Old Spain, who, without regard to their character or their vows, fudy nothing but how to raife a fudden fortune, by abufing the ignorance and extreme credulity of the people. A great deal of attention is paid to certain mechanical methods of devotion. Moral duties are little talked of. An extreme veneration for faints, lucrative to the orders they have founded or are fuppofed to patronize, is ftrongly inculcated, and makes the general fubject of their fermons defigned rather to raife a ftupid admiration of their miracles, than an imitation of the fanctity of their lives. However, having faid this, it muft be confidered as all general obfervations, with the reafonable allowances; for many of the dignified clergy, and others among them, underftand, and practife, the duties of their ftation; and fome whole orders, as that of the jefuits, are here, as they are elfewhere, diftinguifhable for their learning and the decency of their behaviour. And certainly, their zeal is highly commendable; that they are the caufe of feveral charitable foundations; and that they bring the Indians and blacks into fome knowledge of religion, and in fome meafure mitigate their flavery. This too has a good political effect; for thofe flaves are more faithful than ours, and, though indulged with greater liberty, are far lefs dangerous. I do not remember that any infurrection has been ever attempted by them; and the Indians are reduced to more of a civilized life, than they are in the colonics of any other European nation.

This race of people are now, whatever they were formerly, humble, dejected, timorous, and docile; they are generally treated with great indignity. The fate of all people fubjected to another people is infinitely worfe than what they fuffer from the preffure of the worft form, or the worft adminiftration, of any government of their own.

The blacks here, as they are imported from Africa, have the fame character as the blacks of our colonies; ftubborn, hardy, of an ordinary underftanding, and fitted for the grofs flavery they endure.

Such are the characters of the people, not only of New Spain, but of all Spanifh America. When any thing materially different occurs, I hall not fail to mention it.

Vol. I.
R
The

## 242 An Account of the European

The civil government is adminiftered by tribunals, which here are called audiences, confifting of a certain number of judges, divided into different chambers, more refembling the parliaments in France than our courts. At the head of the chief of thefe chambers the viceroy himfelf prefides when he fees fit. His employment is one of the greateft truft and power the king of Spain has in his gift; and is perhaps the richef government entrufed to any fubject in the world. All employments here are held only by native Spaniards, and by them but for a certain limited time; moft not above three years. Jealoufy, in this refpect, as in all others relative to the Indies, is the fpirit that influences all their regulations; and it has this very bad effect; that every officer, from the higheft to the loweft, has the avidity which a new and lucrative poft infpires; ravenous becaufe his time is fhort, he oppreffes the people and defrauds the crown; another fucceeds him with the fame difpofitions; and no man is careful to eftablifh any thing ufeful in his office, knowing that his fucceffor will be fure to trample upon every regulation which is not fubfervient to his own interefts; fo that this enflaved people has not the power of putting in ufe the fox's policy, of letting the firft fwarm of bloodfuckers ftay on, but is obliged to fubmit to be drained by a conftant

## Settlements in America. 243

ftant fucceffion of hungry and impatient harpies.

There are fome troops kept in New Spain, and a good revenue appropriated for their maintenance, and for the fupport of the fortifications there; but the foldiers are few; ill cloathed, ill paid, and worfe difciplined; the military here keep pace with the civil and ecclefiaftical adminiftration, and every thing is a jobb.

## CHAP. VII.

Nerv Mexico: Its difcovery. Climate. Products. The Englijh claim to California.

NEW Mexico lies to the North and North-Eaft of New Spain. Its bounds to the North are not afcertained. Taking in California, it has the great South-Sea to the Weft, and to the Eaft it is bounded by the French pretenfions on the Miffifippi. This country lies for the moft part wichin the temperate zone, and has a moft agreeable climate, and a foil in many places productive of every thing for profit or delight. It has rich mines of filver, and fome of gold, which are worked more and more every day; and it produces precious fones of feveral kinds; but it has no direct intercourfe with any part of Europe. The country is but little known at all

## 244 An Account of the European

to Europeans; and the Spanifh fettlements there are comparatively weak; however, they are every day increafing in proportion as they difcover mines; which are here not inferior to any that have been difcovered in the other parts of America. . The inhabitants are moftly Indians; but in many places lately reduced, by the Spanifh miffionaries, to chriftianity, to a civilized life, to follow trades, and to raife corn and wine, which they now export pretty largely to old Mexico. This ufeful change was principally effected at the expence of a Spanifh nobleman, the marquis Velafco, whom the reverend author of lord Anfon's voyage calls, for that reafon, a munificent bigot.

The famous peninfula of California is a part, and far froman inconfiderable part, of this country. It is a place finely fituated for trade, and has a pearl fifhery of great value. It was difcovered by the great conqueror of Mexico, Hernando Cortes. Our famous admiral and navigator Sir Francis Drake landed there, and took poffeffion of it in $157^{8}$; and he not only took poffeftion, but obtained the beft right in the world to the poffeffion; the principal king having formally invefted him with his principality. However, I do not find that we have thought of afferting that right fince his time; but it may probably employ, in fome future age, the pens of thofe lawyers who difpute
difpute with words what can only be decided by the fword, and will afford large matter upon the right of difcovery, occupancy, and fettlement.

## C H A P. VIII.

The climate and foil of Peru. Its produce. The mines, the coca and berb of Paraguay.

THE conqueft of Peru, atchieved in fo extraordinary a manner, brought into the power of Spain a country not lefs wealthy and nearly as extenfive as Mexico; but far beyond it for the conveniency of habitation and the agreeablenefs of the climate. Like Mexico, it is within the torrid zone; yet, having on one fide the South-Sea, and on the other the great ridge of the Andes through its whole length, the joint effects of the ocean and the mountains temper the equinoctial heat in a manner equally agreeable and furprifing. With a fky for the moft part cloudy, which fhields them from the rays of the vertical fun, it never rains in this country. But every night a foft benign dew broods upon the earth, and refrefhes the grafs and plants fo as to produce in fome parts the greateft fertility; what the dew wants in perfecting this, is wrought by the vaft number of freams, to which the frequent rains and

246 An Account of the European the daily melting of the fnow on thofe aftonifhing mountains give rife; for thofe mountains, though within the tropics, have their tops continually covered with fnow, which is an appearance unparalleled in the fame climate. Along the fea coaft, Peru is generally a dry barren fand, except by the bank of the rivers and ftreams we have mentioned, where it is extremely fertile, as are all the valleys in the hilly country.

The caufe of the want of rain in all the flat country of Peru is difficult to be affigned; though the agents in it are not improbably the conftant South-Weft wind, that prevails there for the greateft part of the year; and the immenfe height of the mountains, cold with a conftant fnow. The plain country between, refremed as it is on the one hand by the cool winds that blow without any variation from the frigid regions of the South, and heated as uniformly by the direct rays of the equinoctial fun, preferves fuch an equal temper, that the vapour once elevated can hardly ever defcend in rain: But in the mountainous part of the country, by the alternate contraction and dilatation of the air from the daily heats and the fucceeding colds, which the fnows communicate in the abfence of the fun, as well as from the unequal temper of the air which prevails in all hilly places, the rain falls very plentifully; the climate in the mountainous countries is extremely changeable, and the changes fudden.

All along the coaft of Peru, a current fets ftrongly to the North; further out to fea, it paffes with equal rapidity to the South. This current probably moves eddywife; for, having run as far asits moving caufe impels it, it naturally paffes back again where it has leaft refiftance. The ignorance of this double current made the navigation in the South-Seas originally very uncertain and fatiguing; but now the courfe is, for thofe who pals from Chili to Peru, to keep in to the fhore in their paffage to Callao, and on their return to ftand out a great many leagues to fea, and take the Southern current homewards. The fame method, but reverfed, is obferved in the voyages between Panama, and all the other Northern countries, and the ports of Peru.

The commodities of Peru, for export, may be reduced to thefe articles. Firft, filver and gold; fecondly, wine, oil, and brandy; thirdly, Vigonia wool; fourthly, jefuits bark; fifthly, Guinea or Jamaica pepper. Of the firf of thefe articles we have already treated in our defcription of Mexico. The mines of gold in Peru are almoft all in the Northern part, not very remote from Lima; thofe of filver almoft wholly in the Southern. The voyagers who treat of this country are generally pretty diffure in their accounts of the

## $24^{3}$ An Account of the European

 principal places, where mines are found; but it does not therefore give us encouragement to infift much on there particulars, becaufe they contain very litule inftruction in themfelves; and if they were things in their own nature infructive, it would be little to the purpofe to dwell upon what is continually changing. New mines are daily opened, and the old exhaufted or deferted. The towns hift with the mines. A rich mine is always the founder of a town in proportion to its produce ; the town which it fublifts, when the mine is exhaufted, difappears. Indeed the great mines of Potofi in the province of Los Charcas, are the inheritance of ages; and, after having enriched the world for centuries, ftill continue the inexhaurible fources of new treafure. They are not however quite fo valuable now as formerly; not fo much from any failure of the vein, as from the immenfe depth to which they have purfued it, which, by the greater labour neceffary, lefiens the profit on what it yields, in proportion as they defcend; befides, new mines are daily opened, which are worked at a lefs expence : fo that the accounts we have had of the great number which inhabited the city of Potofi, when Mr. Frezier was in that country, muft have fince fuffered fome abatement. It had then upwards of feventy thoufand fouls, Spaniards and Indians; of which the latter were fix to one.The

The Spaniards oblige this unfortunate people to fend annually a certain number from the villages of the adjacent country, who are compelled to work for a limited time; afterwards they may return. But, having loft the fweetnefs of their former connexions, they that furvive this flavery commonly fettle in the city of Potoff. It is incredible how thefe mines (the moft terrible fcourge with which God could afflict the inhabitants) have contributed to depopulate this country. Worfe they are than fword or pectilence; equally fatal to their lives; and where thofe efcape, they are embittered by the circumftance of an ignominious flavery, without any profpect of end or mitigation. The effects of this fervitude would be yet more fatal, if it were not for the ufe of an herb which the inhabitants call coca, to which they afcribe the moft extraordinary virtues, and which they conftantly ufe. Its qualities feem to be of the opiate kind, and to have fome refemblance to thofe of tobacco; for it produces a kind of ftupid compofure. It is an antidote againft poifons and poifonous effluvia, and makes thofe who ufe it fubfift a long time without food. Though neceffary to thofe only who work in the mines, it is ufed for pleafure by all the Indians, who chew it confantly, though it makes thofe who ufe it ftink in a moil offenfive manner. This herb is gathered by the Indians with many fuperftitious ceremonies,

250 An Account of the European monies, to which they attribute its virtues; for which reafon it is, in many parts of Peru, with equal fuperftition, ftrictly forbidden; the Spaniards, as well as the Indians, giving the credit of its effects to magic, and allowing to there more than they deferve; for they think the Indians fuperiority in ftrength owing principally to them. However, notwithftanding the feverity of the inquifition, which is eftablifhed in all the Spanifh dominions with great terror, neceffity makes them wink at the practice, where the mines are worked.

They make ufe of another prefervative, an infufion of the herb of Paraguay; fomething of the nature of tea. The confumption of this in Peru by all ranks of people is prodigious. Above 18,000 hundred weight is annually brought into Chili and Peru, and is worth, when the duty is paid, not lefs than 80,000 pound fterling. The fineft of this fpecies of tea comes from the country of the jefuits.

## Settements in America. 251

## C H A P. IX.

The wines of Peru. The wool. The lamas and vicunnas, heep of Peru. Jefuits bark. Guinea pepper. The dung of Iquiqua. Quickjlver mines.

THE Southern part of Peru, which lies without the tropic of Capricorn, produces wine in great plenty, but not in a perfection proportionable. The Spaniards diflike and leave it to the Indians and negroes, chufing rather, what may feem odd, to regale in the brandy of the fame wine, which is likewife made and exported in large quantities, not only to all parts of Peru, but to Panama, and the ports of New Spain. The greateft quantity is made near a place otherwife of no confequence, called Moquaga; here, it is faid, they make annually of wine and brandy one hundred thoufand jars, which Mr. Frezief reckons at three million two hundred thoufand Paris pints. A vaft quantity in a fmall territory. The value of this produce is four hundred thoufand pieces of eight. Other places trade in wine, fuch as Pifco, but of a goodnefs not fuperior. Oil is likewife had in Peru; but both the wine and oil are moftly the produce of thofe places that lie beyond the Eouthern tropic.

## $2 j^{2}$ An Account of the European

Wool makes one of the moft valuable commodities of the growth of this country. And it is not more remarkable for its fine long ftaple, than for the fingularity of the animal which carries it. It is fheered from a fort of fheep, which they call lamas and vicunnas; the lamas have fmall heads, refembling in fome meafure both an horfe and theep; the upper lip is cleft like that of the hare, through which, when they are enraged, they fpit, even to ten paces diftance, a fort of envenomed juice, which, when it falls on the fkin, caufes a red fpot and great itching. The neck is long like that of a camel; the body refembles that of a fheep, but the legs are much longer in proportion. This animal has a difagreeable fmell, but its ferh is good; and it is extremely ufeful, not only for the wool, which is very long and fine, but as it is a beaft of burthen, ftrong, patient, and kept at a very eafy expence. It feldom carries above one hundred and fifty pound weight, but then it carries that weight a vaft way without tiring, eats very little, and never drinks. As foon as night comes, the lama lies down; and no blows can get him to move one foot after the time he deftines for his reft and food.

The vicunna is an animal refembling the lama, pretty much as the dromedary does the camel. He is fmaller and fwifter, with a far finer wool, but otherwife exactly like the lama
in all refpects. The wool of the fe creatures is almoft as fine as filk. Probably the famous fheep of Cachemir, of whofe wonl they make the little white cloths fo much valued in India, is of this fpecies. I cannot afcertain what quantity of this wool is exported, manufactured or raw, out of Peru, either to New or Old Spain; but I have reafon to believe it is not all inconfiderable.

The fourth great article of their commerce is jefuits bark, fo well known in medicine as a fpecific in intermitting diforders, and the many other great purpofes, which experience daily finds it to anfwer. The tree which produces this valuable bark grows principally in the mountainous parts of Peru, and that moft and beft in the province of Quito. Condamine informs us, that it grows on the hither fide of the Andes, no way inferior to the Peruvian in quantity and goodnefs; the beft is produced on the high and rocky grounds; and it is not fingular in this, for it feems in a good meafure to be the cafe of all plants, whofe juices are much more ftrong and effective when elaborated in fuch fituations. The tree which bears it is about the fize of a cherry-tree; its leaves are round and indented; it bears a long reddifn flower, from whence arifes a fort of hulk, which envelopes a lat and white kernel, not unlike an almond. This bark was firf introduced in France by the cardinal Lago, a jefuit,

251 Ain Account of the European jefuit, about the year 1650. Hence it had its name of jefuit's bark. It is faid to have been difcovered by the accident of an Indian'sdrinking in a fever of the water of a lake into which fome of thefe trees had fallen, and by which he was cured. This medicine, as ufual, was held in defiance for a good while by the faculty; but, after an obftinate defence, they have thought proper at laft to furrender. Notwithftanding all the mifchiefs at firft forefeen in its ufe, every body knows that it is at this day innocently and efficacioufly prefcribed in a great variety of cafes; for which reafon it makes a confiderable and valuable part of the cargo of the galleons.

Guinea pepper, Agi, or, as it is called by us, Cayenne pepper, is a very great article in the trade of Peru, as it is ufed allover Spanifh America in almoft every thing they eat. This is produced in the greateft quantity in the vale of Arica, a diftrict in the Southern parts of Peru, from whence they export it to the annual value of fix hundred thoufand crowns. The diftrict which produces this pepper in fuch abundance is but fmall, and naturally barren; its fertility in pepper, as well as in grain and fruits, is owing to the advantage of a fpecies of a very extraordinary manure; brought from an ifland called Iquiqua. This is a fort of yellowifh earth, of a fetid fmell. It is generally thought to be dung
of birds, becaufe of the fimilitude of the fcent; feathers having been found very deep in it, and vaft numbers of fea fowls appearing upon that and all the adjacent coafts. But, on the other hand, whether we look upon this fubfance as the dung of thefe fea fowls or a particular fpecies of earth, it is almoft equally difficult to conceive how the fmall inland of Iquiqua, not above two miles in circumference, could fupply fuch immenfe quantities; and yet, after fupplying upwards of twelve fhip loads annually for a century together for the diftant parts, and a vafly larger quantity for the ufe of the neighbourhood, it cannot be obferved that it is in the leaft diminifhed, or that the height of the inland is at all leffened. But there are matters, which, to handle pro-perly, require a more exact knowledge of all the circumfances relating to them, than can be gathered from travellers.

Quickfilver is a remarkable article in their trade, becaufe the purification of their gold and filver depends upon it. I do not find that any other part of the Spanifh America produces it ; fo that Mexico and Terra Firma are fupplied from Old Spain with all they want of that mineral, which is brought them on the king's account only; except that fome arrives from Peru in a contraband manner. In Peru likewife it is monopolized by the crown. The principal mine of this extraordinary fubftance
$25^{6}$ An Account of the European
fance is at a place called Guancavelica, where it is found in a whitifh mafs, refembling brick ill burned ; this they pound, and put into a furnace vaulted at the top; it is laid upon an iron grate covered with earth. Through this the fire paffes; and, volatilizing the mineral, it is raifed in a fmoke, which, finding no parfage but through a little hole contrived for that purpofe, rufhes through into a fucceffion of little round veffels, united to each other by the necks; here the fmoak circulates, and it condenfes by means of a little water at the bottom of each veffel, into which the quickfilver falls in a pure heavy liquid. The men who work in the mines of this mineral are yet more fubject to difeafes than thofe who toil in the others; and they make ufe of the fame prefervatives of Paraguay, tea and coca.

## C H A P. X.

The cbaracter of the Peruvians. Their divifions. The Indian feflival. Honours paid to a defcendant of the ynca.

THE manners of the Spaniards and Creolians of Peru refemble, with little difference, thofe of the Spaniards and Creolians of Mexico, other than that the natives of Peru feem to be of a more liberal turn, and of greater ingenuity; but they are for the greater part equally deftitute of all cultivation. The flavery of the Indians is here yet more fevere. The magiftrate and the prieft devour their whole fubltance; and every Spaniard, as fome authors report, infults them with impunity. The traveller takes as much of their provifion as he pleafes, and decides for himfelf what he fhall pay, or whether he fhall pay any thing at all. Complaints are anfwered with new indignities, and with blows, which it is a crime to return. This cruel irregular bondage contributes to difpeople this country even more than the methodical tyranny of the goverament. To avoid the plunder he is hourly fubject to, the mafter of the family often railes no more grain than what juft fuffices for the futenance of his family; this he buries, and keeps the fecret of his hoard to himfelf, only drawing out daily juft fo much as ferves for the ufe of the day. If he chances to die fuddenly, the family ftarves; if a bad feafon comes, the calculated produce falls fhort, and they are all reduced to beggary. Yet worfe, they are even the flaves of flaves; for the Spaniards encourage their Negroes to treat them with the greateft infolence; and they politically keep up a rancour, now grown inveterate, between thefe two races of people. They are forbidden, under the fevereft penalies, to VOL. I. $S$ marry
2.58 An Account of the European. marry, or to have an unlawful intercourfe together. Divifion is the great inftrument in which the Spaniards truft for the prefervation of their colonies. The native Spaniard has alone all the lucrative offices, civil, ecclefiaftical, and military. He defpifes the Creolian. The Creolian hates and envies him. Both contemn and maltreat the Indians, who, on their fide, are not infenfible of the indignities they fuffer. The Blacks are encouraged to trample on the Indians, and to confider their interefts as altogether oppofite ; whilft the Indians in their nominal freedom look with an envious difdain upon the llavery of the $\mathrm{Ne}-$ groes, which makes them their mafters.

What is extraordinary, the Spaniards, not content with reducing this unhappy nation under fo cruel a yoke, as if they thought it nothing unlefs they were thoroughly fenfible of its weight, fuffer the Indians to celebrate an annual feftival, in which plays are reprefented, commemorating the overthrow of their own fate. Thefe are acted with all the horrid and aggravating circumftances which attended this event; and the people are at this time fo enraged, that the Spaniards find it dangerous to go abroad. In the city of Lima, there is annually celebrated a feftival of this kind, with a grand proceffion, wherein they carry in a fort of triumph the remaining defcendant of the yncas of Peru, and and his wife; who at that time receive all imaginable honours in the moft melancholy pomp, from a race bowed down with the fenfe of the common bondage of prince and people. This throws the moft affecting gloom over the feftival that renews the image of their former freedom. To this remaining ynca the viceroy of Peru does homage when he enters upon his government. The ynca fits upon a lofty ftage, and the viceroy makes his obeifance upon a horfe, who is taught to kneel upon the occafion. This manner of proceeding may be thought of the moft refined ftrain of infolent tyranny, and to be as unpolitic as it is infulting; but it is not impoffible that thofe vents, which they fuffer the indignation of the people to take, may carry off a fpirit, that might otherwife break out in a much more fatal manner. Whether by the divifion they keep up, or by thefe vents, or by the management of the clergy, or by whatever means, the Spaniards preferve their conquefts with very little force; the Indians are even armed, and make a confiderable part of their militia; it is true, they are interdicted the ufe of weapons without licence; but licence is procured without much difficulty. They have likewife a large number of free blacks, and they too are formed into companies in their militia. Certain it is, that, both in the Spanifh and Portuguefe colonies, they find

260 An Account of the European flavery compatible enough with great licence in fome refpects, and both with the fecurity of the mafters. Things deferving our confideration; as we do not feem to excel in the conciliating arts of government in our colonies, nor to think that any thing is to be effected by other inftruments than thofe of terror and rude force.

## C H A P. XI.

The cities of Peru, Lima, Cufco, and Quito; a defcription of them. Callao, its trade and defiruction. The viceroy of Peru. His jurifdiction, and revenues.

T
HERE are three cities in Peru famous for their opulence and trade; Lima, Cufco, and Quito. Lima lies in the Northern part of Peru, in the latitude of 12 South, and 299 longitude from Teneriffe. It ftands about two leagues from the fea, upon a river called Rimac, fmall and unnavigable. This city is the capital of Peru, and of all South America; it extends in length about two miles, and in breadth about one and a quarter ; its diftant appearance, from the multitude of fpires and domes, is extremely majeftic; and when you enter it you fee the freets laid out with the greateft regularity, cutting each other at equal diftances and right angles; the 4 houfes,

## Settiements in America. 26 i

 houfes, on account of the equality of the climate, are flightly roofed, as they are built low and of light materials, to avoid the confequences of earthquakes, frequent and dreadful in this country. But they are elegantly plaiftered and painted on the outfide, fo as to have all the appearance of free-ftone. To add to the beauty and convenience of this city, moft houfes have a garden, watered by cuts drawn from the river; each man commands a little running ftream for his own ufe; in a hot and dry country as this is, no fmall matter of convenience and delight. Here is a grand walk by the river-fide two hundred fathom long, confifting of five rows of fine orange trees. To this the company reforts at five in the evening drawn in their coaches and calafhes *. Such is the opulence of this city, that, exclufive of coaches, there are kept in it upwards of five thoufand of thefe carriages.Lima has fifty-four churches, taking in the cathedral, the parochial, and conventual; thirteen monafteries of men (befides fix colleges of jefuits), one of which contains feven hundred, and another five hundred friars and fervants; twelve nunneries, the principal of

[^1]262 An Account of the European
which has not lefs than three hundred nuns; and twelve hofpitals, befides foundations for the portioning of poor girls. The number of whites is not lefs than 10,000 ; and the whole of the inhabitants of all cafts and colours are faid not to fall fhort of 60,000 fouls.

They tell a very remarkable fact, that may help us to fome idea of the vaft wealth of this city. When their viccroy the duke de la Palata made his public entry in 1682 , they caufed two of the principal ftreets to be paved with ingots of filver, that had paid the fifth to the king, of between twelve and fifteen inches long, four or five in breadth, and two or three in thicknefs; the whole of which could not amount to lefs than fixteen or feventeen millions fterling. But nothing can give a true idea of the vaft wealth of Lima, except the churches, which the moff judicious travellers fpeak of with aftonifiment; and feem incapable of defcribing, on account of that amazing profufion of gold, filver, and precious ftones with which every thing (even the walls) is in a manner totally covered. The tide of this vaft wealth is fed from fources as copious; this city being the great magazine for almoft all the plate of Peru, which is coined here; for the large manufactures and natural products of that kingiom; for thofe of Chili; and for all the luxuries and conveniences brought from Europe and the Eaft-Indies.

The trade of the French to Peru, during the general war in Europe which was caufed by the difputes about the Spanifh fucceflion, made this city decay not a little, by diffufing the commerce, of which before it was the center, amongft the other towns which lie along the coaft ; but, as that privilege has been fince taken away, Lima began to revive again and continued in great fplendor until the year 1747, when a moft tremendous earthquake, which entirely devoured Callao the port belonging to it, laid three fourths of this city Ievel with the ground. The deftruction of Callao was the moft perfect and terrible that can be conceived; no more than one of all the inhabitants efcaping, and he by a providence the mort fingular and extraordinary imaginable. This man was on the fort that overlooked the harbour, going to ftrike the flag, when he perceived the fea to retire to a confiderable diftance; and then fwelling mountain high, it returned with great violence. The inhabitants ran from their houfesin the utmoft terror and confufion ; he heard a cry of Miferere rife from all parts of the city; and immediately all was flent; the 'fea had entirely overwhelmed this city, and buried it for ever in its bofom; but the fame wave which deftroy'd the city, drove a little boat by the place where the man ftood, into which he threw himfelf and was faved. What

264 An Account of the European
is remarkable too in this affair, Mr. Frezier, who was in Peru in the year 1714. and from whom I have part of my materials, on confidering the firuation of this town and the nature of the country, ventured to prophefy for it the deftruction, which we have feen accomplified in our days. Whilf this town fubfifed, it contained about 3000 inhabitants of all kinds, had five convents, and poffeffed the fineft port in all Peru. Here were the rich warehoufes furnifhed with all the goods of Europe, which being landed by the galleons at Porto-bello were brought over land to Ianama, and thence tranfported hither by the armadilla, or fleet, with a convoy of three men of war referved for this purpofe. To this port arrived the annual hip from Acapulco loaden with all the products of the Eaft ; from Chili it received vaft quantities of corn, dried beef and pork, leather, tallow, plank, and feveral forts of woollen goods, particularly carpets like thofe of Turkey. From the Southern ports of Peru were brought fugars, wine, and brandy, naval fores, cacao, Vigonia wool, and tobacco. From Mexico it had pitch and tar, woods for dying, and that balfam, which we improperly call of Peru, fince it comes from Guatimala. As the port of Callao is fo excellent, and as it is that by which the trade of Lima wholly, and that of all Peruin a great meafure, muft be carried

## Settlements in America. 265

on, we cannot doubt but that a new city is already built there; and that Lima is reftored to its former luftre; efpecially as this latter is the center of fo vaft a trade, and the feat of fo great a government. For to the viceroy of Peru, both Chili and Terra Firma are fubject. His fettled falary is 40,000 pieces of eight yearly; his perquifites are great; as often as he goes to Callao, he is intitled to 3000 pieces of eight for that little airing; he has 10,000 for every progrefs into more diftant parts; he has the fole difpofal of above a hundred great magiftracies; and, in fhort, the granting of all triennial employments both civil and military throughout the extent of his ample jurifdiction. It cannot therefore be doubted that his perquifites, even his lawful ones (for there are many others), at leaft double the value of his falary. And certainly, whatever the king of Spain may lofe by the bad ceconomy in his affairs, no prince in the world bas fuch means of rewarding the fervices of his fubjects, without any immediate burden upon his own revenues.

Cufco, the capital of the ancient empire, is ftill a very confiderable city; it is at a good diftance from the fea, and fituated in the mountainous part of the country; it has not lefs than forty thoufand inhabitants, three parts Indians, who are very induftrious and ingenious. Tho' little infructed in the art, a tafte for paint- applaufe in Italy. An incredible quantity of pictures are painted here, and are difperfed all over Peru and Chili. They have here likewife manufactures of bays and cotton, and they work largely in leather in moft of the ways in which it is ufed.

Quito is likewife an inland town fituated in the moft Northern part of Peru; it is a very confiderable place, and equal to any in Peru for the number of inhabitants, which are between fifty and fixty thoufand; and it carries on a very extenfive trade with Lima, in manufactures of wool, cotton, and flax, which are wrought in the city and its diftrict, and fupply the greater part of the confumption of the poorer fort all over this kingdom. Few mines are worked in this diftrict, tho' thought to abound in minerals; they receive plate in return for their own manufactures, and fend it to Carthagena in return for thofe of Europe.

It is not eafy to calculate the number of inhabitants in Peru, becaufe we have none of thofe data which are neceffary to ground fuch a calculation. There are feveral very large and populous towns difperfed through thatcountry; but in many places it is lietle better than a defart ; partly for want of water, but much more generally through the pride of one part of the people, the miferable fubjection of the other,

## Settiements in America. 267

 other, and the floth of all. The mines undoubtedly contribute largely to depopulate the' country, by turning the inhabitants from agriculture and manufactures, employments that prolong life and provide for it, to the working of metals extremely pernicious to health, and which makes them depend upon others for their neceffary fuftenance. The nations which are poor in refpect of gold, and induftrious from that poverty, have not the leaft reafon to envy the wealth of the Peruvians; who, amidit all that extravagant glare that dazzles the eye, live penurioully and fordidly; and are often in extreme want in a country, which in many places is one of the moft fertile in the world. In fact, the countries which employ their men in arts and in agriculture, and receive their return in gold and filver, from the countries which abound in thofe metals, may be confldered as the real proprietors of the mines; the immediate poffeffors, only as their ftewards to manage, or as their llaves to work them; whilit they are employed themfelves at an eafy labour, friendly to life, and neceflary to their well-being.C H A P.

## An Account of the European

## C H A P. XII.

The temperature of the air in Chili. The foil. Its fertility. A description of the principal towns. The trade of Chili.

TiMediately to the Southward of Peru lies Chili, extending itfelf in a long narrow nip, along the coat of the South-Sea, in the South temperate zone. The air here is remarkably clear and ferene. Scarce any changes happen for three parts of the year. Very little rain falls during that period. But the benign dews every night, and the many rivulets which the neighbourhood of the Andes fupplies them, fertilize the plain country, and make it produce as much corn, wine, oil, and fruits, as the number of the inhabitants, which is very fall; or their induftry, which is but moderate, will fuffer them to cultivate. If it were under a more favourable government, and better peopled, there is hardly any part of the world which could enter into competition with this. For at the fame time that it enjoys a very healthful air, and is warmed by an heat no way oppreflive, it bears many of the triopical fruits that would thrive no where elfe out of the torrid zone. It is luxuriant on the furface with every thing for profit and delight; and beneath it is rich to profufion with veins
of gold, filver, copper, lead, quickfilver, and iron. Thofe of gold are the moft wrought; and indeed there is fcarce a rivulet in the country in which gold is not found in fmaller or greater plenty; but want of people, which is here more felt than in the other Spanifh fettlements, hinders them from working all their mines; and, what is worfe, from improving the furface of their country to any thing like the degree of perfection to which it might be brought. For in this whole extent of country, upwards of twelve hundred miles in length, and from three hundred to five hundred miles in breadth, it is not reckoned they have much above twenty thoufand whites fit to bear arms, and about three times that numher of Indians, Blacks, and Mulattoes. Yet, with fo few hands, and thofe not the moft induftrious, they export annually from the ports of Chili, to Callao, and other parts of Peru, corn enough to fupport fixty thoufand men, for no country in the world is more prolific in grain of every fpecies; they export befides great quantities of wine, hemp (which is raifed in no other part on the South-Seas), hides, tallow, and falted provifions; to fay nothing of the gold, and other minerals, which form their principal wealch. The people are much employed in pafturage; and cattle are here in fuch plenty, that an ox fatted may be had for four dollars; a great proof of

270 An Account of the European
the fertility of a country where there is no fcarcity of money. But as they have a confiderable trade in dried and falted beef, hides, and tallow, they conftantiy drive great numbers of horned cattle from the other fide of the Andes, from the province of Tucuman in Paragua. Chili has but a very few beafts of prey, and thofe timorous; and although toads fnakes, and fcorpions, are here as numerous as in other hot countries, they are found entirely harmlefs.

There are in Chili four towns of fome note, either on the fea, or near it; St. Jago which is the capital, and contains about 4000 families, La Conception, Coquimbo or La Serena, and Baldivia. The three firft of thefe towns are laid out in a manner exactly refembling each other, the ftreets, like thofe of Lima, cutting one another fo as to form fquares like thofe of a draft board. They have all gardens between the houfes, and running waters drawn from the neighbouring rivers to fertilize them; but the houfes are fo low and meanly built (mud walls, and thatch in fome) that they rather refemble agreeable country villages than cities of bufinefs and grandeur. However, fome of the houfes are well furnihhed, and it is faid, that in St. Jago there are many, which have the meaneft utenfils of the kitchen, of gold and filver. As for Baldivia, it is not more remarkable for being being the ftrongeft fortrefs in the South-Seas, than for the manner in which it is peopled; for hither the criminals from Peru and the other parts of Chili are tranfported, either for a time or for life, and obliged to labour upon the fortifications and other public works. What is fingular; thefe criminals are at once the prifoners and the jailors; for the garrifon of the place, the whole corps, foldiers and officers, is formed of no other. The town contains about two thoufand fouls, and all of them banifhed people, or the defcendants of fuch.

The maritime trade of Chili is entirely confined to what they carry on with Peru, one or two ports of New Spain, and Panama. Their Ahips rarely penetrate the ftraits of Magellan, or pafs Cape Horn. But they have a confiderable inland commerce with Tucuman, Bue-nos-Ayres, and other parts of Paragua, from which they get the herb of Paragua, bees-wax, and cattle.

## CHAP. XIII.

The Spaniards in this province but few. The Americans, their cbaracter. Some free.

A$S$ in Chili they are weak in men, have a large body of independent Indians, illaffected to them on their borders; as the Dutch

272 An Account of the European
Dutch once attempted an eftablifhment here, and as other people have nourifhed projects of the fame nature ; they are extremely cautious and watchful on the coaft, and the country is immediately in arms upon every alarm, which is given when any thip appears off the coaft that is not Spanifh built : yet, notwithftanding all their caution, their fecurity is rather owing to the fyftem of Europe, of which it is a part to keep the Spanifh poffeftions in the hand of the prefent proprietors, and to the difficult and dangerous paffage of the ftraits of Magellan or Cape Horne, for any European armament of force, than either to their own ftrength or vigilance.

The Indian inhabitants of Chili are a brave and warlike people, who defended their liberties vigoroully, made feveral fucceffful infur̀rections, killed Peter Baldivia the conqueror of the country, and maintained a war againft the whole Spanifh power in that part of the world for feveral years; which was only terminated, on the part of feveral of the nations near the mountains, by an honourable peace, which is preferved to this day. None can be more jealouly watchful than this people of their freedom. They traffic indeed with the Spaniards, but with fo much caution, and under limitations fo ferict, that they can take very little advantage of this communication. As for thofe who are obliged to fubmit, it is
to a yoke nothing near fo heavy as that which oppreffes the people who inhabit the other Spanifh provinces; partly from the better terms which were procured; and partly from the fear of a nation, whom they have experienced to be brave, and know to be furrounded with many, who are of the fame blood, and have defended their freedom with better fuccefs. A good example, even in the unfortunate, how much a brave defence of liberty may contribute to procure, if nothing elfe, yet a more tolerable fervitude. The Indians of this country have more refemblance to thofe of North America, though more hu-mane and civilized in their manners, than to the Peruvians and Mexicans. Here they have lefs fupertition naturally; and, far from having that exceffive veneration which thofe nations had for their kings, they have no kings at all, and very little form of government ; each family being fovereign within itfelf, and independent. The bufinefs which concerns them all, is tranfacted in the affemblies of all; and the plurality of voices decides. They are mucis given to liquor; and they practife polygamy, which in America is not common. However, the Spanifh miffionaries have now made a confiderable progrefs amongit there free nations; they have a college for the education of the Indian youth; and their influence is a great means of preferving peace between the Spanifh Vol. I.

## 274 An Account of the European

fettlements and the free Indians on their borders, which, without their affiftance, would be difficult. For, though they liften to the Spanifh priefts, they preferve a very juft terror of falling under their government, and no fmall hatred to the people.

## C H A P. XIV.

The climate of Paraguay. Its rivers. The province of La Plata. The town of BuenosAyres. Its trade.

THE country of Paraguay, or La Plata, fhuts up the Eaftern fide of a confiderable part of Chili and Peru; whence extending over a tract of country, above a thoufand miles broad, it bounds Brazil upon the Weft, and upon the South butts upon the Atlantic ocean ; being fifteen hundred miles at leaft in length, from the mouth of the great river Plata to its Northern boundary the country of the Amazons. This vaft territory is far from being wholly fubdued or planted by the Spaniards. There are many parts in a great degree unknown to them, or to any other people of Europe. In fuch a vaft country, and lying in climates fo different, for it lies on the Northein frontier under the equinoctial line, and on the South advances to the thirty, feventh degree of latitude, far into the South temper-
ate zone, we muft expect to meet great diverfity of foil and product. However, in general, this great country is fertile; the paftures particularly are fo rich that they are covered with innumerable herds of black cattle, horfes, and mules; in which hardly any body thinks it worth his while to claim a property. Any perfon takes and breaks them according to his occafions.

This country, befides an infinite number of fmaller rivers, is watered by three principal ones, which unite near the fea, to form the famous Rio de la Plata. The firft is Paraguay, from whence the country is denominated; this forms the main channel. It has its origin from a great lake in the center of South America, called the lake of Xarayes, and runs in a courfe nearly North and South. Parana, which rifes amongft the mountains on the frontiers of Brazil, runs a floping courfe to the SouthWeft, until it joins the Paraguay, at a great diftance from the ocean, about the twentyfeventh degree of South latitude. Uraguay rifes likewife upon the fame fide, and runs almoft an equal courfe before itmeets thofe united rivers at no great diftance from the ocean, with which it mixes, along with them.

The principal province which concerns us, in this vaft tract, is that which is called Rio de la Plata, towards the mouth of the above-mentioned rivers. This province, with all the adT 2
jacent

276 An Account of the European jacent parts, is one continued level, interrupted by not the leaft hill for feveral hundreds of miles every way; extremely fertile in moft things; but, contrary to the general nature of America, deftitute of woods; this want they endeavour to fupply by plantations of every kind of fruit trees; all which thrive here to admiration. The air is remarkably fweet and ferene, and the waters of the great river are equaily pure and wholefome; they annually overflow their banks; and, on their recefs, leave them enriched with a flime, which produces the greateft plenty of whatever is committed to it.

The principal town is Buenos-Ayres, on the South fide of the river; it was fo called upon account of the excellence of the air. This town is the only place of traffic to the Southward of Brazil; yet its trade, confidering the rich and extenfive country to which it is the avenue, is very confiderable. No regular fleet comes here, as to the other parts of Spanifh America; two, or at moft three, regifter fhips make the whole of their regular intercourfe with Europe. Their returns are very valuable, confifting chiefly of gold, filver, fugar, and hides. I cannot learn that they have opened any confiderable mines in this province; but it is probable there are rich ones in the provinces which lie to the Eaftward of the Andes; befides, it is certain that a good deal of gold is

## Settlements in America.

returned from Chili, for the mules, cattle, and tea, which are fent thither; and that filver from the province of Los Charcas in Peru is fent upon the fame account, for the moft part by land carriage. There is befides a tolerable water carriage; for a large river, called Pilcomayo, rifes not far from the mines of Potofi, which, winding amongft the openings of the Cordillera, difcharges itfelf at laft into the Pa raguay; and this river is navigable to the very fource, allowing for the interruption of fome falls, which is the cafe of the river of Plata itfelf. By this way it is, I judge, that a great quantity of filver comes to Buenos-Ayres. Indeed it is in great plenty in that province; and thofe who have now and then carried on a contraband trade to this country, have found it far more advantageous than any other whatfoever. The benefit of this contraband is now wholly in the hands of the Portuguefe, who keep magazines for that purpore in the adjacent parts of Brazil.

$$
T_{3} \quad C_{H A P}
$$

278 An Account of the European

## C H A P. XV.

The territory of thejefuits in Paraguay. Their manner of Settling and governing it. The obedience of the people. Some reflexions on the late tranjactions there.

THE trade of Paraguay, and the manners of the people, are fo much the fame with thofe of the reft of the Spanifh colonies in South America, that nothing further can be faid on thofe articles; but it would be inexcufable to quit the country without faying fomething of that extraordinary fpecies of commonwealth which the jefuits have erected in the interior parts.

About the middle of the laft century thofe fathers reprefented to the court of Madrid, that their want of fuccefs in their miffions was owing to the fcandal which theimmorality of the Spaniards never failed to give, and to the hatred which their infolent behaviour caufed in the Indians wherever they came. They infinuated, that, if it were not for that impediment, the empire of the gofpel might, by their labours, have been extended into the moft unknown parts of America; and that all thofe countries might be fubdued to his catholic majefty's obedience, without expence and without force. This remonftrance was liftened
liftened to with attention ; the fphere of their labours was marked out; an uncontrouled liberty was given to the jefuits within there limits; and the governors of the adjacent provinces had orders not to interfere, nor to fuffer any Spaniard to enter into this pale, without licence from the fathers. They on their part agreed, to pay a certain capitation tax in proportion to their flock; and to fend a certain number to the king's works whenever they fhould be demanded, and the miffions hould become populous enough to fupply them.

On thefe terms, the jefuits entered upon the fcene of action, and opened their firitual campaign. They began by gathering together about fifty wandering families, whom they perfuaded to fettle; and they united them into a little townhip. This was the nlight foundation upon which they have built a fuperftructure, which has amazed the world, and added fo much power, at the fame time that ithas broughton fo much envy and jealoufy, to their fociety. For when they had made this beginning, they laboured with fuch indefatigable pains, and with fuch mafterly policy, that, by degrees, they mollified the minds of the molt favage nations; fixed the moft rambling; and fubdued the moft averfe to government. They prevailed upon thoufands of various difperfed tribes of people to embrace

280 An Account of the European their religion, and to fubmit to their government; and when they had fubmitted, the jefuits left nothing undone, that could conduce to their remaining in this fubjection, or that could tend to increafe their number to the degree requifite for a well-ordered and potent fociety; and their labours were attended with fuccefs.

It is faid, that, from fuch inconfiderate beginnings, feveral years ago, their fubjects amounted to three hundred thoufand families. They lived in towns; they were regularly clad; they laboured in agriculture ; they exercifed manufactures. Some even afpired to the elegant arts. They were inftructed in the military with the moft exact difcipline ; and could raife fixty thoufand men well armed. To effect thefe purpofes, from time to time, they brought over from Europe feveral handicraftmen, muficians, and painters. Thefe, I am told, were principally from Germany and Italy.

We are far from being able to trace, with the exactnefs they deferve, all the fteps which were taken in the accomplifhment of fo extraordinary a conqueft over the bodies and minds of fo many people, without arms of violence; and differently from the methods of all other conquefts; not by cutting off a large part of the inhabitants to fecure the reft, but by multiplying their people, whilft they extended
tended their territory. Their own accounts are not very ample, and they are partial to themfelves without doubt. What fome others have written is with a glaring prejudice againft them. The particulars which feem beft agreed upon by both fides are the only ones to be mentioned.

It is agreed then, that in each miffion or diftrict (the country is divided into forty-feven diftricts) a jefuit prefides in chief. But magiftrates are fettled in every town, anfwerable to thofe in the Spanifh cities; thefe are always Indians, elected by the people, and approved by the prefiding jefuit : on folemn occafions, they appear in rich robes of ceremony, attended with a fuitable retinue, and every thing which may make for the dignity of their government. The people which compofe this commonwealth are compofed chiefly of two nations or tribes, one called Garanies, the other Chiquitos. The latter are active, lively and ingenious, therefore their œconomy is more left to themfelves; and they have fomething of property, but there is fomething too in common. Amongft the Garanies there is no property; every thing is done under the public eye, and for the public; for otherwife this people, naturally lazy and frupid to the laft degree, would be in perpetual want. Each man's labour is allotted him in proportion to his ftrength, or to his Akill in the profeffion which

282 An Account of the European which he exercifes. The product is brought faithfully into the public magazines; from whence he is again fupplied with all things which the managers judge to be expedient for the fuftenance of himfelf or his family. All neceffaries are diftributed regularly twice a week; and the magazines always contain fuch a ftock of provifions and goods of every kind, as to anfwer not only the ordinary exigencies, but to provide againft a time of fearcity, or for thofe whom accidents, age, or infirmities, have difqualified for labour. Thus want is never known amongft them ; their villages are cleanly and decnt, greatly exceeding thofe of the Spaniards in their neighbourhood. Their churches are particularly grand and richly adorned; and fervice is in them performed with ail the folemnity and magnificence of cathedrals; nor are good voices and inftruments wanting.

They provide early for the marriage of their young people, as well to prevent diforders, as to multiply their fubjects. Here, as intereft can be no motive to the union, there are few difficulties attending it. The young man applies to the governing jefuit, informs him of his defire of marriage, and names the party: fhe is confulted, and, if there is no objection upon her part, they are immediately married. They are fupplied with all neceffaries for their eftablimment from the public fores, and they
have at the fame time their tafk allotted them, by which they are to make amends for what they have received, and to provide for others in their turn.

The Indian magiftrate is obliged continually to watch over the minuteft actions of his people, and to give the jefuit an exact account of the fate of his diftrict, and the merit and demerit of the people which it contains. They are rewarded or punifhed according to this report. The punifhment for fmaller crimes is by imprifonment, for greater by whipping, from which it is faid not even the principal magiftrates are exempted. Capital punifhments they do not inflict, as indeed crimes deferving fuch punifhment are rarely committed amongft them. The correcton is received by all, not only with patience, but acknowledgement. The rewards are feldom more than benedictions, and fome flight marks of the jefuits favour, which make thofe men entirely happy.

Nothing can equal the obedience of the people of thefe miflions, except their contentment under it. Far from murmuring, that they have only neceffaries of life, by a labour which might in fome degree procure them the conveniencies of it, they think themfelves a diftinguifhed and favoured people in wanting them; and they believe their obedience a duty, that not only fecures their order and repofe in

284 An Account of the European this world, but the very beft means of infuring their happinefs in the next. This is carefully inculcated; and indeed, befides their attention to the government, the jefuits are indefatigable in their inftructions in the doctrines of religion, the regularity of life, and the contempt of this world. And, by what I can find, the Indians under their jurifdiction are an innocent people, civilized without being corrupted.

The jefuits, who govern them, are faid to be extremelyftrict in preferving their privilege in keeping all ftrangers from amongtt them. If any fuch thould, by accident or in his journey, arrive in the country of the miffions, he is immediately carried to the prefbytery, where he is treated for a day, or two at moft, with great hofpitality, but regarded with no lefs circumfpection. The curiofities of the place are fhewed him in company with the jefuit, and he can have no private converfation with any of the natives. In a reafonable time, he is civilly difmiffed, with a guard to conduct him to the next diftrict, without expence, where he is treated in the fame manner, until he is out of the country of the miffions. Cautions altogether as ftrict, and in the fame fpirit, are obferved, when the natives are obliged to go out of their own territory to ferve in the king's works, or when any part of their troops are called out for his fervice. They Ihun all man-

$$
\text { Settlements in America. } 285
$$ ner of converfation with ftrangers, upon whom they look with a fort of horror; and fo return, uninformed and untainted, into their own country as they left it.

I am fenfible, that many have reprefented the conduct of the jefuits in this miffion in a very bad light; but their reflexions appear to me not at all fupported by the facts upon which they build them. To judge perfectly of the fervice they have done their people, we muft not confider them in a parallel with the flourifhing nations of Europe, but as compared with their neighbours, the favages of South America, or with the ftate of thofe Indians who groan under the Spanifh yoke. Confidering it in this, which is the true light, it will appear, that human fociety is infinitely obliged to them for adding to it three hundred thoufand families in a well-regulated community, in the room of a few vagabond untaught favages. And indeed, it can fcarce be conceived, that the government has not fome extraordinary perfection, which has a principle of increafe within it, which draws others to unite themfelves to the old ftock, and fhoots out itfelf a luxuriance of new branches. Neither can we, by any means, blame a fyftem which produces fuch falutary effects; and which has found that difficult, but happy way, that grand defideratum in politics, of uniting a perfect fubjection to an entire con-

236 An Account of the European tent and fatisfaction of the people. Matters, which, it were to be wifhed, were ftudied with more attention by us, who content ourfelves with railing at the diligence of an adverfary, which we fhould rather praife and imitate; and who, in our affairs, feldom think of ufing any other inftruments than force or money.

This commonwealth is now become a fubject of much converfation, upon account of the ceffion which has lately been made of part of that territory to the crown of Portugal. It is well known, that the inhabitants of feven of the miffions refufed to comply with this divifion, or to fuffer themfelves to be transferred from one hand to another, like cattle, without their own confent*. We are informed, by the authority of the Gazette, that the Indians actually took up arms; but, notwithftanding the exactnefs of their difcipline, they were eafily, and with a confiderable flaughter, defeated by the European troops, who were fent to quell them. It feems to have been ill-judged in this people, who had never feen any real fervice, nor were headed by officers who had feen any, without which the beft difcipline is but a fort of play, to have hazarded a battle with troops
from

[^2]$$
\text { Settements in America. } 287
$$
from Europe. They ought rather to have firft habituated themfelves to action by attacking fmall parties, by cutting off convoys, by little furprizes, until, by ufe and fuccefs in fmaller matters, they were intitled to hazard the fum of their affairs in the open field. However, it is not improbable, that this oppofition will roufe the indolence of the Spaniards, and make them take the government of the country out of the hands it is in at prefent. If they do, it is not difficult to forefee, that the fame depopulation, the fame diftrefs, and the fame difcontent, which diftinguifh the Indians in the reft of the Spanifh provinces, will be foon equally vifible in this. It will not be difficult for them to effect the reduction of this country; for the jefuits have too large and valuable an intereft in Old Spain, as well as in the new world, to difpute it with the court, whenever they fhall demand in good earneft to have this country furrendered; if it be true, that the jefuits have really fuch influence on the inhabitants as is attributed to them.

It was not originally fuch bad policy, as it may feem, to have intrufted the jefuits with fo great a power; fince a little time will Thew, that they have given them a territory unknown, unpeopled, and uncultivated, which they have the certain means of repoffefling when they pleafe, fubdued, peopled, and cultivated.

298 An Account of the European tivated. As to its wealth, it is hard to fay any thing certain; the jefuits deny it. And truly, if they acted with a perfect policy, they would never have fuffered any mines of gold or filver to be opened in that country. Of this matter I have no information upon which I can depend.

## C HAP. XVI.

Terra Firma. Its extent and produce. The. cities of Panama, Cartbagena, and Portobello. The galleons. The ille of Cuba. The Havanna. Hippaniola. Porto Rico. Reflexions on the policy of Spain with regard to the colonies.

THE Spaniards have not made any fettlements in the other divifions of SouthAmerica, which they claim to the Southward of Buenos-Ayres, nor to the Northward, except in Terra Firma, of which we fhall fay fomething. The country of the Amazons, though prodigioufly large, wonderfully fertile, and watered by fo noble a river, is almoft entirely neglected. The river of Amazons, called alfo Maranon and Orellana, which waters and gives its name to this country, arifing from the union of feveral ftreams that fall from the Cordillera, runs a courfe of nolefs than 1100 leagues; it flows for the greater greater part through a level country covered with the faireft and loftieft forefts in the world, in which it forms an innumerable multitude of delightful iflands; and receiving on both fides the copious tribute of feveral rivers almoft equal to itfelf in greatnefs, increafing in breadth to a fort of fea, and to a depth which in fome parts has been in vain fearched with a line of upwards an hundred fathoms, it ruhes at length into the Atlantic ocean by two mouths of an aftonifhing widenefs, the principal being 45 leagues broad, the fmaller not lefs than twelve. The country on this fine river has no other inhabitants than Indians, fome favage, fome united under Spanifh and Portuguefe miffionaries.

The country of Patagonia is likewife of a vaft ftretch to the Southward of BuenosAyres, all in the temperate zone, and extended all along the Atlantic ocean. It is a plain country without trees; but this is the cale of the delightful and fertile country of BuenosAyres. It is faid likewife to be barren and defert ; but, what is certain, it is unfettled by any European nation, and little known, tho' it lies open for any power that can avail itfelf of a favourable opportunity to eftablinh a colony there.

The laft province, according to the order I have obferved, though not of the leaft confequence in the Spanifh American dominions, is

Vox. It
Terra

290 An Account of the European
Terra Firma; a vaft country, above 2000 miles in length, and 500 broad. Bordering on Mexico, Peru, and Amazonia, it ftretches all along the North fea, from the Pacific ocean to the mouth of the river of Amazons upon the Atlantic. It is divided into twelve large provinces. They all contain a vaft deal of high and mountainous country, particularly the province of St. Martha, where there are faid to be hills furpaffing Teneriffe itfelf in height. Thefe hills communicate with the Andes. The valleys are deep and narrow, and for a great part of the year flooded; but though Terra Firma is on the coaft, the moft unpleafant and moft unhealthful country in the torrid zone, the plain grounds are extremely fertile; produce corn enough, when cultivated, all kinds of the tropical fruits; rich drugs; cacao, vanilla, indigo, piemento, guaiacum, farfaparilla, and balfam of Peru. No country abounds more in rich and luxuriant pafturage, or has a greater frock of black cattle. Their rivers have rich golden fands; their coafts have good pearl fifheries; and their mines formerly yielded great quantities of gold; but at prefent they are neglected or exhaufted; fo that the principal wealth of this kingdom arifes from the commerce of Carthagena; and what treafure is feen there is montly the return for European commodities which are fent from that port to Santafe,

Popayan, and Quito: and rubies and emeralds are here found in plenty; but, the value of precious fones depending more on fancy than that of gold or filver, this trade has confiderably declined.

This province has a very confiderable mare of the trade of Europe; not only on account of its own produce and demand, but becaufe all the intercourfe of Peru and Chili with Old Spain is carried on through this country, for, as we have mentioned, Carthagena fupplies. Its capital city Panama is the great barcadier of the South-Sea. Hither is brought all the treafure which the rich mines of Peru and Chili pay to the king, or produce upon a private account.

The city of Panama is fituater upon one of the beft harbours, in all refpects, of the SouthSeas. Ships of burden lie fafe at fome diftance from the town; but fimaller veffels come up to the walls. In this bay is a pearl fifhery of great value. The town, one of the largeft in America, is faid to contain five thoufand houfes, elegantly built of brick and fone, difpofed in a femicircular form, and enlivened with the fpires and domes of feveral churches and monafteries. It is covered on the land fide with an agreeable country, diverffified with hills, valleys, and woods. The town ftands upon a dry and tolerably healthiful ground, and has a great and profitable trade with Peru,

292 An Account of the European
Chili, and the Weftern coaft of Mexico, chiefly for provifions of every fort both of the animal and vegetable kinds; corn, wine, fugar, oil, with tallow, leather, and jefuits bark. In the neighbourhood of this city they raife nothing; and yet, by traffic and their convenient fituation, there are few cities more abundantly fupplied with all things for neceffity, convenience, or luxury. Their trade with the Terra Firma and with Europe is carried on over the ifthmus of Darien, and by the river Chagra.

The fecond town of confideration in Terra Firma, is Carthagena, which ftands upon a peninfula, that enclofes one of the fafeft and beft defended harbours in all the Spanifh America. The town itfelf is well fortified, and built after the elegant fafhion of moft of the Spanifh American towns, with a fquare in the middle, and freets running every way regularly from it, and others cutting the feat right angles. This town has many rich churches and convents; that of the jefuits is particularly magnificent. Here it is that the galleons on their voyage from Spain put in firf, and difpofe of a confiderable part of their cargo; which from hence is diftributed to St. Martha, the Caraccas, Venezuela, and moft of the other provinces and towns in the Terra Firma.

The

The fleet which is called the galleons confifts of about eight men of war, of about fifty guns each, defigned principally to fupply Peru with military ftores; but in reality, laden not only with thefe, but with every other kind of merchandize on a private account; fo as to be in bad condition for defending themfelves, or protecting others. Under the convoy of thefe fail about twelve merchant hips, not inferior in burden. This fleet of the galleons is regulated in much the fame manner with the flotas, and it is deftined for the exclufive commerce of Terra Firma and the South-Sea, as the flota is for that of Mexico.

No fooner is this fleet arrived in the haven of Carthagena, than exprefles are immediatly difpatched to Porto-bello, and to all the adjacent towns, but principally to Panama; that they may get ready all the treafure which is depofited there, to meet the galleons at Porto-bello; in which town, (remarkable for the goodnefs of its harbour, which brings fuch a furprifing concourfe here at the time of the fair, and the unwholfomenefs of the air, which makes it a defart at all other time) all the perfons concerned in the various branches of this extenfive traffic affemble; and there is certainly no part of the world where bufinefs of fuch great importance is negociated in fo thort a time. For in about a fortnight the fair is over; during which the difplay of the gold, filver, and

294 An Account of the European precious fones, on the one hand, and of all the curiofity and variety of the ingenious fabrics of Europe on the other, is aftonifhing. Heaps of wedges and ingots of filver are tumbled about on the wharfs like common things. At this time an hundred crowns are given for a poor lodging, a thoufand for a hhop, and provifion of every kind is proportionably dear; which may help us to fome idea of the profits made in this trade. The treafure is brought hither from Panama, by a very dangerous road, upon mules. The other goods, fugar, tobacco, and drugs, are tranfported on the river Chagra.

When the galleons have taken in their returns, they feer together to the Havanna, which is the place of rendezvous of all the mips concerned in the Spanifh American trade:

The Havanna is the capital city of the ifland of Cuba, it is fituated upon an excellent harbour upon the Weftern extremity of the ifland. This city is large, containing not lefs than two thoufand houfes, with a number of churches and convents; but then it is the only place of confequence upon the noble ifland of Cuba, which lies in the latitude 20 , and extends from Eaft to Weft near feven hundred miles in length, though in breadth it is difproportioned, being but from one hundred and twenty to feventy miles. However, it yields.

$$
\text { Settiements in America. } 295
$$ yields to no part of the Weft-Indies in the fertility of its foil, or in excellence of every thing which is produced in that climate. But the Spaniards, by a feries of the moft inhuman and impolitic barbarities, having exterminated the original inhabitants, and not finding the quantities of gold in the inlands which the continent afforded, they have left this, as well as Hifpaniola, of which the French now poffefs the greater part, and Porto Rico, a large, excellent, and fertile inland, comparatively fo many defarts. The commerce between thefe iflands and the Spanifh continent, is carried on by the Barlevento fleet, confifting of fix fhips of good burthen and force, who annually make the tour of all thefe inlands, and the coaft of Terra Firma, not only to carry on the commerce between thofe places, but to clear the fea of pirates and illicit traders. Now and then a regifter fhip from Old Spain is bound to one or other of thefe iflands. Hitherto the Spaniards feemed rather to keep them, to prevent any other nation from growing too powerful in thofe feas, than for any profit they expected to derive from them. And it is certain, that if other nations hould come entirely to poffefs the whole of the inlands, the trade of the American continent, and perhaps the continent itfelf, would be entirely at their mercy. However, of late, the Spaniards have taken fome fteps towards the bet-

296 An Actount of the European ter fettlement of Porto Rico. They are beginning to open the American trade to fome other towns in Spain befides Cadiz. They have made a difference in point of duty between their own manufactures and thofe of foreigners. They are, in Chort, opening their eye to the true intereft of their country, and moving their hands, though flowly, to promote it.

Upon this time, the tide of wealth, that conftantly flowed from America into Spain, ran through that kingdom like a hafty torrent, which, far from enriching the country, hurried away with it all the wealth which it found in its pafiage. No country in Europe receives fuch vaft treafures as Spain. In no country in Europe is feen fo little money. The truth is, from the time that the Indies fell into the hands of Spain, the affairs of that monarchy have been conftantly going backward. In America their fettlements were carried on conformably to that genius, and to thofe maxims, which prevailed in their government in Europe. No means of retaining their conqueits but by extirpating the people; no fchemes for the advancement of trade; no attempts at the reformation of abufes, which became venerable in proportion to the mifchiefs they had fuffered by them. In government, tyranny; in religion, bigotry; in trade; monopaly.

When the Spaniards found, to their ambition which was boundlefs, that they had joined a treafure which was inexhauftible, they imagined there was nothing too vaft for them to compafs. They embraced a thoufand projects at once; many of them noble ones in theory, but to be executed with different inftruments in different parts of the world, and all at a valt expence of blood and treafure. The wars, which were the refult of there fchemes, and the Indies, which were to fupport them, were a continual drain, which carried off their people, and deftroyed all induftry in thofe who remained. The treafure which flowed in every year from the new world, found them in debt to every part of the old; for to the reft of their revenues they had forgot to add that, which is a great revenue itfelf, and the great fupport of all the others, ceconomy. On the contrary, an ill order in their finances at home, and a devouring ufury abroad, fwallowed up all their treafure, whilf they multiplied the occafions for it. With the beft fcheming heads in Europe, they were every where outwitted; with the braveft and beft difciplined troops, they were almoft always defeated; with the greateft treafures, they were in want; and their armies were ill provided, and ill paid. Their friends exhaufted them by trade; their enemies by plunder. They faw new fates arife out of the fragments of their dominions;

298 An Account of the European and new maritime powers ftart up from the wrecks of their navy. In fhort, they provoked, troubled, and enriched all Europe; and at laft defifted through mere want of ftrength. They were inactive, but not quiet; and they were enervated as much by their lazinefs during this repofe, as they had been weakened before by their ill-judged activity.

All this happened in a country, which abounded with men of capacity as much as any ftate in Europe, and often with men of great capacity at its head. But their talents took a wrong turn; their politics were always more abroad than at home; more employed in weakening their neighbours, than in ftrengthening themfelves. They were wife in the concerns of foreign courts; they were fatisfied with being formal in their own domeftic bufinefs. They relied too much upon their riches; and the whole ftate, being moulded into a fyitem of corruption from the top to the bottom, things grew at laft fo bad, that the evils themfelves became a fort of remedies; and they felt fo feverely the confequences of their former conduct, that they have for fome years paft turned their thoughts into a very good channel ; and they may in time, and with perfeverance, rife again, whilft others fhall fall, by adopting the abufes which brought them to ruin.

$$
\text { Settlements in Aimerica. } 299
$$

At prefent the politics of Spain, with regard to America, feem to be, to preferve South America, and particularly the navigation of the South-Seas, as much as poffible to themfelves; to deftroy effectually the contraband trade, and to encourage the export of their own manufactures. Of us they have long fhewn a remarkable jealoufy; a much greater than of the French, whom they fee quietly fettling in the neighbourhood of New Mexico; and who are growing certainly in the Weft-Indies in a far greater degree than we are. I fhall not pretend to account for this diftinction.

End of the Third Part.

300 An Account of the European

H2

## P A R T IV.

## The Portugue



## CHAP. I.

An account of the difovery of Brazil. The method of jettling it. Conquered by the Dutch. Reconquered by the Portuguefe.

T is very rare that any material difcovery; whether in the arts, in philofophy, or in navigation, has been owing to efforts made directly for that particular purpofe, and determined by the the force of reafonings a priori. The firft hints are owing to accident; and difcoveries in one kind prefent themfelves voluntarily to us, whilft we are in fearch of what flies from us in fome other. The difcovery of America by Columbus was owing originally to a juft reafoning on the figure of the earth, tho' the particular land he difcovered was far enough enough from that which he fought. Here was a mixture of wife defign and fortunate accident; but the Portuguefe difcovery of Brazil may be confidered as merely accidental. For failing with a confiderable armament to India, by the way of the Cape of Good Hope, but ftanding out to fea to avoid the calms upon the coaft of Africa, the Portuguefe fleet fell in upon the continent of South America. Upon their return they made fo favourable a report of the land they had difcovered, that the court refolved to fend a colony thither. And accordingly made their firft eftablifhment ; but in a yery bad method, in which it were to be wifhed they had never been imitated. This was by banifhing thither a number of criminals of all kinds. This blended an evil difpofition with the firt principles of the colony, and made the fettlement infinitely difficult by the diforders infeparable from fuch people, and the offence which they gave the original inhabitants, This fettlement met with fome interruption too from the court of Spain, who confidered the country as within their dominions. However, matters were accommodated by a treaty, in which it was agreed, that the Portuguefe thould poffers all that tract of land that lies between the river Maranon, or of the Amazons, and the river Plate.

When their right was thus confirmed, the Portuguefe purfued the fettlement with great

302 An Account of the European
vigour. Large grants were made to thofe who were inclined to become adventurers; and almoft all the nobility of Portugal procured interefts in a country which promifed fuch great advantages. The natives were in moft parts fubdued, and the improvement of the colony advanced apace. The crown in a little time became attentive to fo valuable an acquifition; the government was new modelled, many of the exorbitants recalled, and all things fettled upon fo advantageous a footing, that the whole fea coaft, upwards of two thoufand miles, was in fome meafure fettled; to the honour of the induftry and courage of the firft planters, and infinitely to the benefit of the mother-country. The Portuguefe conquefts on the coaft of Africa forwarded this eftablifhment, by the number of Negroes it afforded them for their works; and this was the firft introduction of Negroes into America, of which at prefent they form a large part of the inhabitants.

In the very meridian of their profperity, when the Portuguefe were in poffeftion of fo extenfive an empire, and fo flourifhing a trade in Africa, in Arabia, in India, in the ifles of Afia, and in one of the moft valuable parts of America, they were ftruck down by one of thofe incidents, that by one blow, in a critical time, decides the fate of kingdoms. Don Sebaftian, one of their greateft princes,

Settiements in America. 303 in an expedition he had undertaken againft the Moors, loft his life; and by that accident the Portuguefe loft their liberty, being abforbed into the Spanifh dominions.

Soon after this misfortune, the fame yoke that galled the Portuguefe, grew fo intolerable to the inhabitants of the Netherlands, that they threw it off with great fury and indignation. Not fatisfied with erecting themfelves into an independent ftate, and fupporting their independency by a fuccefsful defenfive war, flufhed with the juvenile ardor of a growing commonwealth, they purfued the $\varepsilon_{\text {paniards }}$ into the remoteft receffes of their extenfive territories, and grew rich, powerful, and terrible, by the fpoils of their former mafters. Principally, they fell upon the poffeflions of the Portuguefe; they took almoft all their fortreffes in the Eaft-Indies, not fufficiently defended by the inert policy of the court of Spain; and then turned their arms upon Brazil, unprotected from Europe, and betrayed by the cowardice of the governor of the then principal city. And they would have overrun the whole, if Don Michael de Texeira, the archbifhop, defcended from one of the nobleft families in Portugal, and of a fpirit fuperior to his birth, had not believed, that in fuch an emergency, the danger of his country fuperfeded the common obligations of his profeffion. He took arms, and at the head of

304 An Account of the European
his monks, and a few fcattered forces, put a ftop to the torent of the Dutch conqueft. He made a gallant ftand until fuccours arrived; and then refigned the commiffion with which the public neceflity and his ovin virtue had armed him, into the hands of a perfon appointed by authority. By this fand he faved feven of the captainfhips, or provinces, out of fourteen, into which Brazil is divided; the reft fell into the bands of the Dutch, who conquered and kept them with a bravery and conduct, which would deferve more applaufe, if it had been governed by humanity.

The famous captain, prince Maurice of Naffau, was the perfon to whom the Dutch owed this conqueft, the eftablifhment of their colony there, and that advantageous peace which fecured them in it. But as it is the genius of all mercantile people to defire a fudden profit in all their defigns; and as this colony was not under the immediate infpection of the States, but fubject to the company called the Weft-India company, from principles narrowed up by avarice and mean notions, they grudged that the prefent profits of the colony thould be facrififed to its future fecurity. They found, that the prince kept up more troops, and erected more fortrefles, than they thought neceffary to their fafety; and that he lived in a grander manner than they thought became one in their fervice,

They imagined that a little official œconomy was the principal quality neceffary to form a great conqueror and politician; and therefore they were highly difpleafed with their governor prince Maurice, whom they treated in fuch a manner as obliged him to refign.

Now their own fchemes took place. A reduction of the troops; the expence of fortifications faved; the charge of a court retrenched; the debts of the company ftrictly exacted; their gains increafed cent per cent, and every thing flourifhing according to their beft ideas of a flourifhing fate. But then, all this fine fyftem in a Mort time ended in the total lofs of all their capital, and the entire ruin of the WertIndia company. The hearts of fubjects were loft, by their penurious way of dealing and the feverity of their proceedings. The enemy in their neighbourhood was encouraged, by the defencelefs ftate of their frontiers; and both operated in fuch a manner, that Brazil was reconquered by the Portuguefe; though after a ftruggle, in which the States exerted themfelves vigorounly; but with that aggravated expence, and that ill fuccefs, which always attends a late wifdom, and the patching up of a blundering fyfem of conduct. A ftanding leffon to thofe people who have the folly to imagine they confult the happinefs of a nation, when, by a pretended tendernefs for fome of its advantages, they neglect the only things Vol. I.

306 An Account of the European
that can fupport it, the cultivating of the good opinion of the people, and the keeping up of a proper force.

## C H A P. II.

The climate of Brazil. Of the Brazil wood.
HHE name of Brazil was given to this country, becaufe it was obferved to abound with a wood of that name. It extends all along a tract of fine fea coaft upon the Atlantic ocean upwards of two thoufand miles, between the river of Amazons on the North, and that of Plate on the South. To the Northward, the climate is uncertain, hot, boifterous, and unwholfome. The country, both there and even in more temperate parts, is annually overflowed. But to the Southward, beyond the tropic of Capricom, and indeed a good way beyond it, there is no part of the world that enjoys a more ferene and wholfome air; refremed with the foft breezes of the ocean on one hand, and the cool breath of the mountains on the other. Hither feveral aged people from Portugal retire for their health, and protract their lives to a long and eafy age.

In general, the foil is extremely fruitful, and was found very fufficient for the comfortable fubfiftence of the inhabitants, until the
mines of gold and diamonds were difcovered. Thefe, with the fugar plantations, occupy fo many hands, that agriculture lies neglected; and, in confequence, Brazil depends upon Europe for its daily bread.
The chief commodities which this country yields for a foreign market are, fugar, tobacco, hides, indigo, ipecacuanha, balfam of Copaibo, and brazil wood. As this laft article in a more particular manner belongs to this country, to which it gives its name, and which produces it in the greateft perfection, it is not amifs to allow a very little room to the defcription of it. This tree generally flourifhes in rocky and barren grounds, in which it grows to a great height and confiderable thicknefs. But a man who judges of the quantity of the timber, by the thicknefs of the tree, will be much deceived; for, upon ftripping off the bark, which makes a very large part of the plant, he will find, from a tree as thick as his body, a log no more in compafs than his leg. This tree is generally crooked, and knotty like the hawthorn, with long branches, and a fmooth green leaf, hard, dry, and brittle. Thrice a year, bunches of fmall flowers hoot out at the extremities of the branches, and between the, leaves. Thefe flowers are of a bright red, and of a ftrong aromatic and refrefhing frell. The wood of this tree is of a red colour, hard and dry. It is ufed chiefly in dying red, but X 2 not

308 An Account of the European not a red of the beft kind; and it has fome place in medicine as a ftomachic and reftringent.

## C H A P. III.

The trade of Brazil. Its intercourfe with Africa. The fettlement of the river Amazons and Rio Faneiro. The gold mines. The commonveraltls of the Paulifts. The diamond mines.

THE trade of Brazil is very great, and it increafes every year. Nor is this a wonder; fince they have opportunities of fupplying themfelves with flaves for their feveral works, at a much eafier and cheaper rate than any other European power, which has fettlements in America. For they are the only European nation which has taken the pains to eftablifh colonies in Africa. Thofe of the Portuguefe are very confiderable, both for their extent and the numbers of their inhabitants; and of courfe they have advantages in that trade which no other nation can have. For, befides their large eftablifhment on the Weftern fhore of Africa, they claim the whole coaft of Zanguebar on the Eaftern fide, which in part they poffefs; befides feveral other large territories, both on the coaft and in the country; where feveral numerou's nations acknowledge
ledge themfelves their dependents or fubjects. This is not only of great advantage to them, as it increafes their fhipping and feamen and ftrengthens their commercial reputation, but as it leaves them a large field for their flave trade; without which, they could hardly ever fupply, upon any tolerable terms, their fettlements in Brazil, which carry off fuch numbers, by the feverity of the works and the unwholfomenefs of fome part of the climate; nor could they otherwife extend their plantations, and open fo many new mines as they do, to a degree which is aftonifhing.

I own, I have often been furprized, that our African traders fhould chufe fo contracted an object for their flave trade, which extends to little more than fome part of the Gold coaft, to Sierra Leone, and Gambia, and fome other inconfiderable ports; by which they have depreciated their own commodities, and raifed the price of flaves within thefe few years above thirty per cent. Nor is it to be wondered ; as in the tract, in which they trade, they have many rivals; the people are grown too expert, by the conftant habit of European commerce; and the flaves in that part are in a good meafure exhaufted; whereas, if fome of our vef? fels paffed the Cape of Good Hope, and tried what might be done in Madagạicar, or on thofe coafts which indeed the Portuguere claim, but do not nor cannot hold, there is

## 3 io An Account of the European

 no doubt but that they would find the greater expence and length of time in paffing the Cape, or the charge of licences which might be procured from the Eaft-India company, amply compenfated. Our African trade might then be confiderably enlarged, our own manufacsures extended, and our colonies fupplied at an eafier rate than they are at prefent, or are likely to be for the future, whilft we confine ourfelves to two or three places, which we exhauft, and where we Thall find the market dearer every day. The Portuguefe, from thefe fettlements and this extenfive range, draw every year into Brazil between forty and fifty thoufand flaves. On this trade all their other depends, and therefore they take great care to have it well fupplied, for which purpofe the fituation of Brazil, nearer the coaft of Africa than any other part of America, is very convenient ; and it co-operates with the great advantages they derive from having colonies in both places.Hence it is principally, that Brazil is the richeft, moft flourifhing, and moft growing effabliohment in all America. Their export of fugar within forty years is grown much greater than it was, though anciently it made almoft the whole of their exportable produce, and they were without rivals in the trade. It is finer in kind than what any of ours, the French, or Spanif fugar plantations fend us. Their

Their tobacco too is remarkably good; and they trade very largely in this commodity to the coaft of Africa, where they not only fell it directly to the natives, but fupply the hips of other nations, who find it a neceflary article to enable them to carry on the flave and gold duft trade to advantage. -The Northern and Southern parts of Brazilabound in horned cattle; thefe are hunted for their hides, of which no lefs than twenty thoufand are fent annually into Europe.

The Portuguefe were a confiderable time pofleffed of their, American empire, before they difcovered the treafures of gold and diamonds, which have fince made it fo confiderable. After the explofion of the Dutch, the colony remained without much attention from the court of Portugal; until in 1685 , a minifter of great fagacity advifed the then monarch to turn his thoughts to fo valuable and confiderable a part of his territories. He reprefented to him, that the climate in the bay of All-Saints, where the capital food, was of fuch a nature as to deaden the activity and induftry of the people; but that.the Northern and Southern extremities of Brazil, in a more temperate climate, invited them to the cultivation of the country. The advice was taken. But, becaufe it was found that the infolence and tyranny of the native Portuguefe always excited the hatred of the native Brazilians, and confequently X 4 obftructed

## 3 I2 An Account of the European

obfructed the fettlements, they were refolved to people the countries, which were now the object of their care, with thofe who are called Meftizes; that is, a race fprung from a mixture of Europeans and Indians, who they judged would behave better; and who, on account of their connexion in blood, would be more acceptable to the Brazilians on the borders, who were not yet reduced. To compleat this defign, they vefted the government in the hands of priefts, who acted each as governor in his own parifh or diftrict. And they had the prudence to chufe with great care fuch men as were proper for the work. The confequence of there wife regulations was foon apparent; for, without noife or force, in fifteen years, they not only fettled the fea coaft, but, drawing in vaft numbers of the natives, they fpread themfelves above an hundred miles more to the Weftward than the Portuguefe fettlements had ever extended. They opened feveral mines, which improved the revenues; the planters were eafy, and feveral of the priefts made no inconfiderable fortunes.

The fame of thefe new mines drew together a number of defperadoes and adventurers of all nations and colours; who, not agreeing with the moderate and fimple manners of the inhabitants of the new fettlements, nor readily. fubmitting to any order or reftraint elfewhere,
retired into a mountainous part of the country, but fertile enough, and rich in gold; where, by the acceflion of others in their own circumftances, they foon became a formidable and independent body, and for a long time defended the privileges they had affumed with great courage and policy. They were called Paulifts, from the town and diftrict called St. Paul, which was their head quarters. But, as this odd commonwealth grew up in fo unaccountable a manner, fo it perifhed in a manner altogether unknown in this part of the world. It is now heard of no longer. The king of Portugal is in full poffeffion of the whole country; and the mines are worked by his fubjects and their flaves, paying him a fifth. There mines have poured almoft as much gold into Europe as the Spanifh America had of filver.

Not many years after the difcovery of the gold mines, Brazil, which for a century had been given up as a place incapable of yielding the metals for which America was chiefly valued, was now found to produce diamonds too; but at firft of fo unpromifing a nature, that the working of the mines was forbidden by the court of Portugal, left, without making any compenfation by their number, they might depreciate the trade which was carried on in thofe ftones from Goa. But, in fpite of this prohibition, a number were from time to time

314 An Account of the European time fmuggled from Brazil; and fome too of fuch great weight, and high luftre and tranfparency, that they yielded very little to the fineft brought from India. The court now perceived the importance of the trade, and accordingly refolved to permit it, but under fuch reftrictions as might be fufficiently beneficial to the crown and fubject; and at the fame time preferve the jewels in that fcarcity which makes the principal part of their value. In 1740, the diamond mines were farmed at one hundred and thirty-eight thoufand crufadoes, or about twenty-fix thoufand pounds ferling annually, with a prohibition againft employing more than fix hundred flaves at a time in the works. It is probable that this regulation is not very ftrictly complied with; the quantity of diamonds being much increafed, and their value of courfe funk, fince that time. It is true, that diamonds of the very firit rank are nearly as dear as ever. None of the diamonds of Brazil have fo high a luftre as the firft rate of Golconda; and they have generally fomething of a dunky yellowifh caft; but they have been found of a prodigious fize. Some years ago we had an account in the news papers of one fent to the king of Portugal, of a fize and weight almoft beyond the bounds of credibility; for it was faid to weigh fixteen hundred carats, or fix thoufand feven hundred and twenty grains; grains; and confequently muft be worth fevesal millions.

## C H A P. IV.

Regulation of the Portuguefe trade. The deficiption of St. Salvador, the capital of Brazil. The fleets for that city. Rio Faneiro and Fernambucca.

THE trade of Portugal is carried on upon the fame exclufive plan, on which the feveral nations of Europe trade with their colonies of America; and it more particularly refembles the Spanih method, by fending out not fingle fhips, as the conveniency of the feveral places and the ideas of the European merchants may direct ; but by annual fleets, which fail at fated times from Portugal and compofe three flotas bound to as many ports in Brazil; to Fernambucca, in the Northern part; Rio Janeiro, at the Southern extremity; and the bay of AllSaints, in the middle. In this laft is the capital, which is called St. Salvador, where all the fleets rendezvous on their return to Portugal. This city commands a noble, fpacious, and commodious harbour. It is built upon an high and fteep rock, having the fea upon one fide, and a lake forming a crefcent, invefting it almoft wholly, fo as nearly to join the

316 An Account of the European the fea on the other. This fituation makes it in a manner impregnable by nature; but they have befides added to it very frong fortifications. All thefe make it the ftrongeft place in America. It is divided into an upper and lower town. The lower confifts only of a freet or two, immediately upon the harbour, for the convenience of lading and unlading goods, which are drawn up to the higher town by machines. The ftreets in the upper town are laid out as regularly as the ground will admit, and are handfomely built. They thad forty years ago in this city above two thoufand houfes, and inhabitants proportionable; a fumptuous cathedral; feveral magnificent churches, and many convents, well built and endowed. The Portuguefe fleet fets out from Lifbon in its royage hither in the month of February.

I can get no accounts, precife enough to be depended upon, of the towns of Fernambucca or Parayba, and the capital of the Rio de Janeiro, to enable me to be particular about them. Let it fuffice that the fleet for the former of thefe fets out in March; and for the latter in the month of January; but they all rendezvous in the bay of All-Saints, to the number of an hundred fail of large thips, about the month of May or June, and carry to Europe a cargo little inferior in value to the treafures of the flota and gaileons. The gold alones alone amounts to near four millions fterling. This is not all extracted from the mines of Brazil; but, as they carry on a large direct trade with Africa, they bring, efpecially from their fettlement at Mozambique, on the Eaftern fide of that continent, befides their flaves, vaft quantities of gold, ebony, and ivory, which goes into the amount of the cargo of the Brazil fleets for Europe. Thofe parts of Brazil which yield gold, are the middle and Northern parts on the Rio Janeiro and Bay or All-Saints. They coin a great deal of gold in America; that which is coined at Rio Janeiro bears an R, that which is Itruck at the Bay is marked with a $B$.

To judge the better of the riches of this Brazil fleet, the diamonds it contains muft not be forgot. For if the mines rented to the crown in the year 1740, at twenty-fix thoufand pounds a year, it will be a very fmall allowance to fay, that at leaft five times more is made out of them; and that there is returned to Europe in diamonds to at leaft the value of one hundred and thirty thoufand pounds. This, with the fugar, which is principally the cargo of the Fernambucca fleet, the tobacco, the hides, the valuable drugs for medicine and manufactures, may give fome idea of the importance of this trade, not only to Portugal, but to all the trading powers of Europe. The returns are not the fiftieth

318 An Account of the European fiftieth part of the produce of Portugal. They confift of the woollen goods, of all kinds, of England; France, and Holland; the linens and laces of Holland, France, and Germany; the filks of France and Italy; lead, tin, iron, copper, and all forts of utenfils wrought in thefe metals, from England; as well as faltfifh, beef, flour, and cheefe. Oil they have from Spain. Wine, with fome fruits, is nearly all with which they are fupplied from Portugal.

Though the profits in this trade are great, very few Portuguefe merchants trade upon their own flocks; they are generally credited by the foreign merchants, whofe commodities they vend, efpecially the Englifh. In fhort, though in Portugal, as in Spain, all trade with their plantations is ftrictiy interdicted to ftrangers ; yet, like all regulations that contradict the very nature of the object they regard, they are here as little attended to as in Spain. The Portuguefe is only the truftee and factor; but his fidelity is equal to that of the Spanif merchant; and that has fcarce ever been fhaken by any public or private caufe whatfoever. A thing furprifing in the Portuguefe; and a friking inftance amongtt a people fo far from remarkable for their integrity, of what a cuftom originally built upon a few examples, and a confequent reputation built upon.that, will be able to effect in a fucceflion
of men of very different natural characters and morals. And fo different is the fpirit of commercial honefty from that of juftice, as it is an independent virtue, and influences the heart.

The Englifh at prefent are the moft interefted, both in the trade of Portugal for home confumption and of what they want for the ufe of the Brazils. And they deferve to be moft favoured, as well from the fervices they have always done that crown and from the ftipulations of treaties, as from the confideration that no other people confumes fo much of the products of Portugal. However, partly from our own fupinenefs, partly from the policy and activity of France, and partly from the fault of the Portuguefe themfelves, the French have become very dangerous rivals to us in this, as in moft other branches of our trade. It is true, though the French have advanced fo prodigioully, and there is a fpirit of induftry and commerce raifed in moft countries in Europe, our exports of manufactures or natural products have by no means leffened within thefe laft forty years; which can only be explained by the extending of our own, and the Spanifh and Portuguefe colonies, which increafes the general demand. But, though it be true, that we have rather advanced than declined in our commerce upon the whole, yet we ought to take great care not to be deceived

320 An Account of the European
by this appearance. For if we have not likewife advanced in as great a proportion to what we were before that period, and to our means fince then, as our neighbours have done in proportion to theirs, as I apprehend we have not, then, I fay, we have comparatively declined; and fhall never be able to preferve that diftinguifhed rank of the firft commercial and maritime power in Europe, time muft be effential to preferve us in any degree, either of commerce or power. For if any other power, of a more extenfive and populous territory than ours, fhould come to rival us in trade and wealth, he muft come of neceffity to give law to us in whatever relates either to trade or policy. Notwithftanding that the want of capacity in the minifters of fuch a power, or the indolence of the fovereign, may protract the evil for a time, it will certainly be felt in the end, and will fhew us demonftratively, though too late, that we muft have a great fuperiority in trade, not only to ourfelves formerly, but to our neighbours at prefent, to have any at all which is likely to continue with us for a long time.

## C H A P. V.

The character of the American Portuguefe. The ftate of the Negroes. The government.

THE pourtrait which the moft judicious travellers give us of the manners and cuftoms of the Portuguefe in America, is very far from being favourable to that people. They are reprefented as a people at once funk in the mof effeminate luxury, and practifing the moft defperate crimes. Of a diffembling hypocritical temper; of little honefty in dealing, or fincerity in converfation; lazy, proud, and cruel. They are poor and penurious in their diet, not more through neceffity than inclination. For, like the inhabitants of moft Southern climates, they are much more fond of fhow, ftate, and attendance, than of the joys of free fociety and the fatisfaction of a good table. Yet their feafts, feldom made, are fumptuous to extravagance.

The luxury, indolence, pride, and cruelty of the mafters has, amongft other caures, been very juftly attributed to their being bred up amongtt flaves, having every bufinefs entirely done by fuch; and to their being permitted to keep a prodigious number of Negroes, not for their field work, nor for Vol. I. domeftic domentic employments, but merely to wait upon them, and to form their train. Thefe become more corrupted than their mafters, who make them the inftruments of their crimes; and, giving them an unbounded and fcandalous licence, employ them, whenever they want to terrify or revenge, as bullies and affaffins. And indeed nothing can be conceived more fit to create the worft diforders, than the unnatural junction of flavery to idlenefs and a licentious way of living. They are all fuffered to go armed, and there are vaft numbers who have merited or bought their freedom; and this is fuffered in a country where the Negroes are ten to one.

But this picture, perhaps too highly coloured for thofe whom it is intended to reprefent, is by no means applicable to all the Portuguefe of Brazil. Thofe by the Rio Janeiro, and in the Northern captainfhips, are not near fo effeminate and corrupted as thofe of the Bay of All-Saints, which, being in a climate favourable to indolence and debauchery, the capital city, one of the oldeft fettlements, is in all refpects worfe than any of the others.

The government of Brazil is in the viceroy, who refides at St . Salvador. He has two councils, one for criminal, the other for civil affairs; in both which he prefides. But, to the infinite prejudice of the fettlement, all the delay, chicanery, multiplied expences

## Setteements in America. 323

 expences incident to the worft part of the law, and practifed by the moft corrupted lawyers, flourifh here; at the fame time that juftice is fo lax that the greareft crimes often pafs with impunity. Formerly the judges could not legally punifh any Portuguefe with death. And it is not difficult to imagine, how much a licence in fuch a country muft have contributed to a corruption, that it may be the bufinefs of fucceffions of good magiftrates, and ages of good difcipline, to reftore to foundnefs. Upon the river of Amazons, the people, who are moftly Indians and reduced by the priefts fent thither, are ftill under the government of thefe paftors. The feveral divifions of this country are called miffions.As the Portuguefe have been once difpoffeffed of this country by the Dutch, and once endangered by the French, their miffortunes and dangers have made them wife enough to take very effectual meafures for their future fecurity. St. Salvador is a very ftrong fortification; they have others that are not contemptible; befides a good number of European regular troops, of which there are two regiments in St. Salvador. The militia too is regimented, amongit whom they reckon fome bodies of Indians, and free Negroes; and indeed at prefent Brazil feems to be in as little danger as the fettlements of any power

324 An Account, \&c.
of America, not only from their own internal ftrength, their remotenefs, and the intolerable heat and unhealthinefs of a great part of the climate, but from the intereft that moft of the ftates in Europe, who are concerned in that trade, have to keep it in the hands of the Portuguefe.

## End of the First Volume.


空
0.



[^0]:    * The towns are fmall, and, except the affairs of war or ftate, shey have no bufinefs to employ them, for the greateft part of ihe year, after the hunting !eaton is over.
    occa§ion,

[^1]:    * The calafh refembles that fort of coach which is called a Vis. a Vis, but is drawn only by a fingle horle or mule, and goes on a fingle pair of wheels; yet fometimes by the gitding and other decorations the price of a calah amounis to a thoufand crowns.

[^2]:    * The jefuits have been entirely difgraced at the court of Portugal, for the fhare they are faid to have had in this refutance.

